

THE WELL-BELOVED

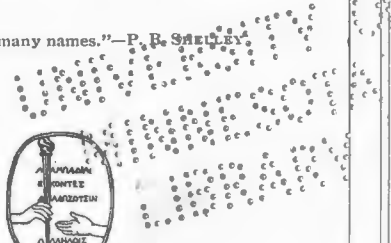
27m

THE WELL-BELOVED

A SKETCH OF A TEMPERAMENT

BY
THOMAS HARDY

"One shape of many names."—P. B. SHAFLEY



HARPER & BROTHERS PUBLISHERS
NEW YORK AND LONDON

WALDORF BINDERY COMPANY, LIBRARY BINDERS, SAINT PAUL, MINN.



THIN PAPER EDITION OF BOOKS BY
THOMAS HARDY.

UNDER THE GREENWOOD TREE.
DESPERATE REMEDIES. Map.
A LAODICEAN. Map.
FAR FROM THE MADDING CROWD. Map.
THE MAYOR OF CASTERBRIDGE. Map.
TESS OF THE D'URBERVILLES.
TWO ON A TOWER. Map.
A PAIR OF BLUE EYES. Map.
THE WOODLANDERS.
THE HAND OF ETHELBERTA. Map.
THE TRUMPET MAJOR. Map.
THE RETURN OF THE NATIVE. Map.
WESSEX TALES. Map.
JUDE THE OBSCURE.
THE WELL-BELOVED. Map.
LIFE IN LETTERS.
A GROUP OF NOBLES AND DAMES. Illustrated.

Small 12mo. In two bindings. Pliable Cloth, \$1.25 per volume; Full Leather, net, \$1.25 per volume.

HARPER & BROTHERS, PUBLISHERS, N. Y.

Copyright, 1892, 1897, by HARPER & BROTHERS.

PREFACE

THE peninsula carved by time out of a single stone, whereon most of the following scenes are laid, has been for centuries immemorial the home of a curious and almost distinctive people, cherishing strange beliefs and singular customs, now for the most part obsolescent. Fancies, like certain soft-wooded plants which cannot bear the silent inland frosts, but thrive by the sea in the roughest of weather, seem to grow up naturally here, in particular among those natives who have no active concern in the labors of the "isle." Hence it is a spot apt to generate a type of personage like the character imperfectly sketched in these pages—a native of natives—whom some may choose to call a fantast (if they honor him with their consideration so far), but whom others may see only as one that gave objective continuity and a name to a delicate dream which in a vaguer form is more or less common to all men, and is by no means new to Platonic philosophers.

PREFACE

To those who know the rocky coigne of England here depicted — overlooking the great Channel highway with all its suggestiveness, and standing out so far into mid-sea that touches of the Gulf Stream soften the air till February—it is matter of surprise that the place has not been more frequently chosen as the retreat of artists and poets in search of inspiration, for at least a month or two in the year—the tempestuous rather than the fine seasons by preference. To be sure, one nook therein is the retreat, at their country's expense, of other geniuses from a distance; but their presence is hardly discoverable. Yet perhaps it is as well that the artistic visitors do not come, or no more would be heard of little freehold houses being bought and sold there for a couple of hundred pounds—built of solid stone, and dating from the sixteenth century and earlier, with mullions, copings, and corbels complete. These transactions, by-the-way, are carried out and covenanted, or were till lately, in the parish church, in the face of the congregation, such being the ancient custom of the "isle."

The present is the first publication of this tale in an independent form; and a few chapters have been rewritten since it was issued in the periodical press in 1892.

T. H.

January, 1897.

CONTENTS

PART FIRST

A YOUNG MAN OF TWENTY

omitted in LN - combined with III.

	PAGE
I. A SUPPOSITITIOUS PRESENTMENT OF HER . . .	3
II. THE INCARNATION IS ASSUMED TO BE TRUE <i>Out</i>	4
III. THE APPOINTMENT	22
IV. <i>The</i> LONELY PEDESTRIAN	26
V. A CHARGE	33
VI. ON THE BRINK	44
VII. HER EARLIER INCARNATIONS	51
VIII. " <i>a mis calculation</i> TOO LIKE THE LIGHTNING"	62
IX. FAMILIAR PHENOMENA IN THE DISTANCE . . .	74

PART SECOND

A YOUNG MAN OF FORTY

Part II. in LN.

I. THE OLD PHANTOM BECOMES DISTINCT . . .	83
II. SHE DRAWS CLOSE AND SATISFIES	99
III. SHE BECOMES AN INACCESSIBLE GHOST . . .	109
IV. SHE THREATENS TO RESUME CORPOREAL SUB- STANCE	122

CONTENTS

	PAGE
V. THE RESUMPTION TAKES PLACE	130
VI. THE PAST SHINES IN THE PRESENT.	136
VII. THE NEW BECOMES ESTABLISHED	148
VIII. HIS OWN SOUL CONFRONTS HIM.	159
IX. JUXTAPOSITIONS.	167
X. SHE FAILS TO VANISH STILL <i>They Cloudly Confess</i>	188
XI. <i>Q/lonely Melancholy</i> THE IMAGE PERSISTS. <i>not still the image</i>	190
XII. A GRILLE DESCENDS BETWEEN <i>the Vision and Him</i>	199
XIII. SHE IS ENSHROUDED FROM SIGHT	214

PART THIRD

A YOUNG MAN *259 LN.*

I. SHE RETURNS FOR THE NEW SEASON	223
II. MISGIVINGS ON <i>this new heart</i> RE-EMBODIMENT	239
III. THE RENEWED IMAGE BURNS ITSELF IN	250
<i>He looks</i> IV. A DASH FOR THE LAST INCARNATION	262
V. <u>ON THE VERGE OF POSSESSION</u>	277
VI. <u>THE WELL-BELOVED IS—WHERE?</u>	292
VII. <u>AN OLD TABERNACLE IN A NEW ASPECT</u>	311
VIII. <u>"ALAS FOR THIS GRAY SHADOW ONCE A MAN!"</u>	321

PART FIRST

A YOUNG MAN OF TWENTY

Key to Reading the
Annotated Book.

All words and lines underlined
do not occur in the serial version.
By the observance of this and
the use of the inserts, the serial
version may be easily
read.

Not in ILN

"Now, if Time knows
That Her, whose radiant brows
Weave them a garland of my vows;

Her that dares be
What these lines wish to see:
I seek no further, it is She."

—R. CRASHAW.

Chapter I.
in ILN

Insert 1.

RELICS

(Brief synopsis given here.)

A young London sculptor kneels before the fire in his rooms. Before him are packages of letters which he is burning. From those few already on the coals he is able to decipher the varied hand-writing of his various, erstwhile sweethearts. Memories come back to him of the affection which once had lived. He cannot burn the letters after all. He decides to take them with him as he goes on the next day to his old home, and there reconsider their existence.

He finds them too bulky for his portmanteau, and so wraps them in his overcoat, which he secures by strapping.

About two o'clock the next day he was ascending the steep roadway which led from the village of Slopeway Well to the summit of the rocky peninsula called an island, that juts out like the head of a flamingo into the English Channel, and is connected with the mainland of Wessex by a long, thin beach of pebbles, representing the neck of the bird.

self-reproach that a whole three years and eight months had ^{it was his}flowed since he ^{had}paid his last visit to his father at this lonely rock of his birthplace, the intervening time having been spent amid many contrasting societies, peoples, manners, and scenes. ^{at home & abroad.}

What had seemed ^{usual} in the isle when he ^{left it, nor}lived there ^{always} looked quaint and odd ^{amid these}later impressions. ^{More than ever}the spot seemed what it was said once to have been, the ancient Vindilia Island, and the Home of the Slingers. The towering rock, the houses above houses, one man's doorstep rising behind his neighbor's chimney, the gardens hung up by one ^{edge} to the sky, the vegetables growing on apparently almost vertical planes, the unity of the whole island as a solid and single block of limestone four miles long, were no longer familiar and commonplace ideas. All now stood ^{clean}dazzlingly ^{white} and white against the ^{blue}tinted sea, and the ^{sun} flashed on ^{the}indefinitely stratified walls of ^{oolite}oolite.

"The melancholy ruins
Of cancelled cycles," . . . ^{Prophecy in shapes}
^{husaled in grey annihilations.}
with a distinctiveness that call the eyes to it
as strongly as any spectacle he had beheld afar.

After a laborious clamber he reached the top, and walked along the plateau towards the ^{east}eastern village. The time being about two o'clock, in the middle of the summer season, the road was glaring and dusty, ^{and} ^{as always} drawing near to his father's house he sat down in the sun.

He stretched out his hand upon the rock beside him. It felt warm. That was the island's personal temperature when in its afternoon sleep, ^{as now}. He listened, and heard sounds: ^{rustle-rustle}whir-whir, saw-saw-saw. Those were the island's ^{voices}shores—the noises of the quarrymen and stone-sawyers.

Opposite to the spot on which he sat was a roomy cottage or homestead. Like the island it was all of stone, not only in walls but in window-frames, roof, chimneys, fence, stile, ^{Plu.}pigsty and stable, almost door.

He remembered who had used to live there—and probably lived there now—the Caro family; the "roan-mare" Caros, as they were called to distinguish them from other branches of the same ^{Family}pedigree, there being but half a dozen Christian names and surnames in the whole island. He crossed the road and looked in at the open doorway. Yes, there they were still.

Mrs. Caro, who had seen him from the window, met him in the entry, and ^{there} an old-fashioned greeting took place between them. A moment after a door leading from the back rooms was thrown open, and a young girl about seventeen or eighteen came bounding in.

"Why, 'tis dear Joce!" she burst out joyfully. And running up to ^{him she seized his} the young man, ^{she kissed him before he was aware of her intention.}

The demonstration was sweet enough from the owner of such an affectionate pair of bright hazel eyes and brown tresses of hair. But it was so sudden, so unexpected by a man fresh from towns, that he winced for a moment quite involuntarily; and there was some constraint in the manner in which he returned her kiss, and said, "My pretty little Avice, how do you do after so long?"

For a few seconds her impulsive innocence hardly noticed his start of surprise; but Mrs. Caro, the girl's mother, had observed it instantly. With a pained ^{face} flush she turned to her daughter ^{seriously}.

"Avice—my dear Avice! Why—what are you doing? Don't you know that you've grown up to be a woman since Jocelyn—Mr.

Pierston

Pierston—was last down here? Of course you mustn't do now as you used to do three or four years ago!"

The awkwardness which had arisen was hardly removed by Pierston's assurance that he quite expected her to keep up the practice of her childhood, followed by several minutes of conversation on general subjects. He was vexed from his soul that his unaware movement should so have betrayed him. At his leaving he repeated that if Avice regarded him otherwise than as she used to do he would never forgive her; but though they parted good friends, her regret at the incident was visible in her face. Jocelyn passed out into the road and onward to his father's house hard by. The mother and daughter were left alone.

"I was quite amazed at 'ee, my child!" exclaimed the elder. "A young man from London and ^{the Continent} foreign cities, used now to the strictest company manners, and ladies who almost think it vulgar to smile broad! How could ye do it, Avice?"

"I—I didn't think about how I was altered!" said the conscience-stricken girl. "I used to kiss him, and he used to kiss me before he went away."

"But that was years ago, my dear!"

"Oh yes, and for the moment I forgot! He seemed just the same to me as he used to be."

"Well, it can't be helped now. You must be careful in the future. He's got lots of young women, I'll warrant, and has few thoughts left for you. He's what they call a sculptor, and he means to be a great genius in that line some day, they do say."

"Well, I've done it, and it can't be mended!" moaned the girl.

Meanwhile Jocelyn Pierston, the sculptor of budding fame, had gone onward to the house of his father, an inartistic man of trade and commerce merely, from whom, nevertheless, Jocelyn accepted a yearly allowance pending the famous days to come. But the elder, ^{having} having received no warning of his son's intended visit, was not at home to receive him. Jocelyn looked round the familiar premises, glanced across the ^{way} Common at the great yards, within which eternal saws were going to and fro upon eternal blocks of stone—the very same saws and the very same blocks that he had seen there when last in the island, so it seemed to him—and then passed through the dwelling into the back garden.

Like all the gardens in the isle, ^{it,} it was surrounded by a wall of dry-jointed spawls, and at its farther extremity it ran out into a corner, which adjoined the garden of the Caros. He had no sooner reached this spot than he became aware of a murmuring and sobbing on the other side of the wall. The voice he recognized in a moment as Avice's, and she seemed to be confiding her trouble to some young friend of her own sex.

"Oh, what shall I *do!* what *shall* I do!" she was saying bitterly. "So bold as it was—so shameless! How could I think of such a thing! He will never forgive me—never, never like me again! He'll think me a forward hussy, and yet—and yet I quite forgot how much I had grown. But that he'll never believe!" The accents were those of one who had for the first time become conscious of her womanhood, as an unwonted possession which shamed and frightened her.

"Did he seem angry at it?" inquired the friend.

"Oh no—not angry! Worse. Cold and haughty. Oh, he's such a fashionable person now—not at all an island man. But there's no use in talking of it. I wish I was dead!"

Pierston retreated as quickly as he could. He grieved at the incident which had brought such pain to this innocent soul, and yet it was beginning to be a source of ^{considerable} vague pleasure to him. He returned to the house, and when his father had come back and welcomed him, and they had shared a meal together, Jocelyn again went out, full of an earnest desire to soothe his young neighbor's ^{grief} sorrow in a way she little expected; though, to tell the truth, his affection for her was rather that of a friend than of a lover, and he felt by no means sure that the migratory, elusive idealization he called his love, who, ever since his boyhood, had flitted from human shell to human shell an indefinite number of times, was going to take up her abode in the body of Avice Caro.

II

THE INCARNATION IS ASSUMED TO BE TRUE

IT was difficult to meet her again, even though on this lump of rock the difficulty lay as a rule rather in avoidance than in meeting. But Avice had been transformed into a very different kind of young woman by the self-consciousness engendered of her impulsive greeting, and, notwithstanding their near ^{proximity} neighborhood, he could not ^{with} encounter her, try as he would. No sooner did he appear an inch beyond his father's door than she was to earth like a fox; ^{that is} she bolted up-stairs to her room.

Anxious to soothe her after his ^{relent} unintentional slight, he could not stand these evasions long. The manners of the isle were primitive and straightforward, even among the well-to-do; and noting her disappearance one day, he followed her into the house and onward to the foot of the stairs.

"Avice!" he called.

"Yes, Mr. Pierston."
 "Why do you run up-stairs like that?"
 "Oh—only because I wanted to come up for something."

"Well, if you've got it, can't you come down again?"

"No, I can't very well."

"Come, dear Avice. That's what you are, you know."

There was no response.

"Well, if you won't, you won't!" he continued. "I don't want to bother you." And Pierston went away.

He was stopping to look at the old-fashioned flowers under the garden walls when he heard a voice behind him.

"Mr. Pierston—I wasn't angry with you. When you were gone I thought—you might mistake me, and I felt I could do no less than come and assure you of my friendship still."

Turning, he saw the blushing Avice immediately behind him.

"You are a good, dear girl!" said he, and, seizing her hand, set upon her cheek the kind of kiss that should have been the response to hers on the day of his coming.

"Darling Avice, forgive me for the slight

For change here
 N.B. 2

as he threw
 down the
 hitch fork

impulsive

She blushed rather than spoke her forgiveness, and shrank away, sitting down upon a squared stone round which the burnt sheets of paper were strewn. With some embarrassment at her presence he withdrew another handful from the collection and threw it on the flames.

"What are you burning?" she asked.

"O, only some papers I hadn't time to destroy before I left town, and which I forgot till today that I had brought with me."

"Ah, that was the parcel you left at our house, perhaps."

"Yes".

She scanned more closely the packets scattered around her. "They are letters in different hand-writings."

"Yes".

"O Joce- Mr. P. they are in women's hands! They are love-letters?"

He did not answer for a moment, during which interval a sudden sadness overspread her face, which had just before blushed so significantly under his caress. She bent her head, and covered her eyes with her hand.

"I see- I see now!" she whispered.

"I am- only one- in a long, long row!"

From the white sheets of paper round her seemed to rise the ghosts of Isabella, Florence, Winifred, Lucy, Jane, and Evangeline- each writer from her own bundle respectively- and Maud and Dorothea from the flames. He hardly knew what to say to the new personality in the presence of the old. Then a sudden sense of what a good and sincere girl A. was overcame the spectres, and rushing up to her and kneeling down upon the letters, he exclaimed,

"A., dear A., I say---

insert 2
neg them or

that day! Say you do. Come, now! And
then I'll say to you what I have never said to
any other woman, living or dead: 'Will you
have me as your husband?'

insert 3

... at least, not many of them. Still,
what does it matter? We must gain
experience.

afternoon, when she walked with him to the
southern point of the island called the Beal, or,

insert 16

He had hardly left the door when Mrs.
C's servant ran out to ask him if he had
left his coat behind him when he called on
the day of his arrival. They had found it
in the house, and had not been sure whose
it was.

"Oh, yes, it is mine", said Jocelyn
hastily. "I forgot it."

The great coat was strapped up around
the letters just as he had arranged it, but
he wondered as he walked on whether Mrs. C.
or A. had looked inside as a means of ident-
ification. Determining to run no further
risks, he set about destroying the letters
then and there. To burn them in a grate was
an endless task. He went into the garden,
threw them down, made a loose heap of a por-
tion, and put a match to the windy side.

By the help of a pitchfork to stir
them about he was fairly successful tho as
soon as he ceased to stir, they ceased to
burn. He was deeply occupied in the busi-
ness of feeding the fire from the adjoining
heap when ----

"Recite!" said he. "Who'd have thought anybody or anything could recite down here, except the reciter we hear away there—the never ^{silent} speechless sea." ^{"she said"}

"Oh, but we are quite intellectual now; in the winter, particularly. But, Jocelyn—don't come to the recitation, will you? It would spoil my performance if you were there, and I want to be as good as the rest."

"I won't if you really wish me not to. But I shall meet you at the door and bring you home."

"Yes!" she said, looking up into his face, ^{and they had been back together}
 Avice was perfectly happy now; she could never have believed, ^{at the time of her day} on that mortifying day of his coming that she would be so happy with him. When they reached the east side of the ^{new complex to park at once} ~~the~~ they parted, that she might be soon enough to take her place on the platform. Pierston went home, and after dark, when it was about the hour for accompanying her back, he went along the middle road northward to the ^{he thought it would} ~~Street~~ ^{of Wells} ~~Street~~ of Wells.

He was full of misgiving. He had known Avice Caro so well of old that his feeling for her now was rather ^{one of friendship} comradeship than love; and what he had said to her in a moment of im-

pulse that morning rather appalled him in its consequences. Not that ^{either} any of the more sophisticated and accomplished women who had attracted him successively would be likely to rise inconveniently between them. For he had quite disabused his mind of the ^{old-fashioned} assumption that the idol of ^{a man's} his fancy was an integral part of the personality in which it ^{might be located} had sojourned for a long or a short while.

To his ^{intrinsic} Well-Beloved he had always been faithful; but she had had many embodiments. Each individuality known as Lucy, Jane, Flora, Evangeline, or what-not, had been merely a transient condition of her. He did not recognize this as an excuse or as a defence, but as a fact simply. Essentially she was perhaps of no tangible substance; a spirit, a dream, a frenzy, a conception, an aroma, an epitomized sex, a light of the eye, a parting of the lips. God only knew what she really was; Pierston did not. She was indescribable.

Never much considering that she was a subjective phenomenon vivified by the weird influences of his descent and birthplace, the discovery of her ghostliness, of her independence

of physical laws and failings, had occasionally given him a sense of fear. He never knew where she next would be, whither she would lead him, having herself instant access to all ranks and classes, to every abode of men. Sometimes at night he dreamed that she was "the wile-weaving Daughter of high Zeus" in person, bent on tormenting him for his sins against her beauty in his art—the implacable Aphrodite herself indeed. He knew that he loved the masquerading creature wherever he found her whether with blue eyes, black eyes,

insert 4

She was indescribable unless by saying she was a mood of himself.

-- which he might otherwise have incurred from his own judgment as being the very embodiment of fickleness.

insert 5

she would as by a ^{throughout} ~~success~~ remained the occupant of the same fleshly tabernacle in her career so far. Whether she would ultimately settle down to one he could not say.

Had he felt that she ^{had now taken up her abode} was becoming manifest in Avice, he would have tried to believe that

this was the terminal spot of her migrations, and have been content to abide by his words. But did he ^{love Avice -} see the Well-Beloved ^{made manifest} in Avice at all? The question was somewhat disturbing.

He had reached the brow of the hill, and descended towards the ^{Slopedown Hill} village, where in the long, straight, Roman street he soon found the lighted hall. The performance was not yet over; and by going round to the side of the building and standing on a ^{slope} mound he could see the interior as far down as the platform level. Avice's turn, or second turn, came on almost immediately. Her pretty embarrassment on facing the audience rather won him away from his doubts. She was, in truth, what is called a "nice" girl; ^{pretty} attractive, certainly, but above all things nice—one of the class with whom the risks of matrimony approximate most nearly to ^{nil} zero. Her intelligent eyes, her broad forehead, her thoughtful carriage, insured one thing, that of all the girls he had known he had never met one with more charming and solid qualities than Avice Caro's. This was not a mere conjecture—he had known her long and thoroughly; her every mood and temper.

A heavy wagon passing without drowned

her small, soft voice for him; but the audience were pleased, and she blushed at their applause. He now took his station at the door, and when the people had done pouring out he found her within awaiting him.

They climbed homeward slowly by the Old Road, Pierston dragging himself up the steep by the ^{cross} ~~wayside~~ hand-rail and pulling Avice after him upon his arm. ^{Reaching} At the top they turned and stood still. To the left of them the sky was streaked like a fan with the lighthouse rays, and ^{up} ~~under~~ their front, at periods of a quarter of a minute, there arose a deep, hollow stroke like the single beat of a drum, the intervals being filled with a long-drawn rattling, as of bones between huge canine jaws. It came from the vast ^{val} ~~concave~~ of Dead-man's Bay, rising and falling against the pebble ^{bank} ~~dike~~.

The evening and night winds here were, to Pierston's mind, charged with a something that did not burden them elsewhere. They brought it up from that sinister bay to the west, whose movement she and he were hearing now. It was a presence—an imaginary shape or essence from the human multitude lying below: those who had gone down in

vessels of war, East-Indiamen, barges, brigs, and ships of the Armada—select people, common, and debased, whose interests and hopes had been as wide asunder as the poles, but who had rolled each other to oneness on that restless sea-bed. There could almost be felt the brush of their huge composite ghost as it ran a shapeless figure over the isle, shrieking for some good god who would disunite it again.

The twain wandered a long way that night amid these influences—so far as to the old Hope Church-yard, which lay in a ravine formed by a landslip ages ago. The church had slipped down with the rest of the cliff, and had long been a ruin. It seemed to say that in this last local stronghold of the pagan divinities, where pagan customs lingered yet, Christianity had established itself precariously at best. In that solemn spot Pierston kissed her.

The kiss ^{that evening} ~~was~~ ^{not} by no means on Avice's initiative. ^{this time} Her former demonstrativeness seemed to have increased her present reserve.

^{No trace in I.L.N.} ^{to} However that day was the beginning of a pleasant month passed mainly in each other's society. ^{by the pair.} He found that she could not only recite poetry

THE WELL-BELOVED

at intellectual gatherings, but play the piano fairly, and sing to her own accompaniment.

He observed that every aim of those who had brought her up had been to get her away mentally as far as possible from her natural and individual life as an inhabitant of a peculiar island; to make her an exact copy of tens of thousands of other people, in whose circumstances there was nothing special, distinctive, or picturesque; to teach her to forget all the experiences of her ancestors; to drown the local ballads by songs purchased at the Bud-mouth fashionable music-sellers', and the local vocabulary by a governess-tongue of no country at all. She lived in a house that would have been the fortune of an artist, and learned to draw London suburban villas from printed copies.

Avice had seen all this before he pointed it out, but, with a girl's tractability, had acquiesced. By constitution she was local to the bone, but she could not escape the tendency of the age.

The time for Jocelyn's departure drew near, and she looked forward to it sadly, but serenely, their engagement being now a settled thing. Pierston thought of the native custom on such

A YOUNG MAN OF TWENTY

occasions, which had prevailed in ^{both} his and her family for centuries, both being of the old stock of the isle. The influx of "kimberlins," or "foreigners" (as strangers from the mainland of Wessex were called), had led in a large measure to its discontinuance; but underneath the veneer of Avice's education many an old-fashioned idea lay slumbering, and he wondered if, in her natural melancholy at his leaving, she ~~regretted the changing manners which~~ ^{deplored any such ceremony} ~~made unpopular the formal ratification of a~~ ^{as a} ~~their~~ betrothal, according to the precedent of their sires and grandsires.

To scent her mind on the point he asked her to meet him in the Old Hope Church yard one evening at three o'clock.

Insert 6.
Chap. 1V
The Lonely Pedestrian

The Hope Churchyard lay in a dell framed by a landslip ages ago, and the church had long been a ruin. At the hour appointed, she descended the rocks, and found him waiting at the foot of them.

They wandered hither and thither in the shades, and the solemnity of the spot and the absence of daylight assisted him in sounding her mind upon a subject which could not be approached with levity.

He found that in common with all the islanders born, she knew of the observance. But it was obvious that in view of herself as a modern young woman, she had never expected it to arise as a practical question between him and her. Some of the working quarriers had kept it up, but nobody else, she said.

Jocelyn hastened to inform her that he only wished to consult her desires as to the terms of their engagement, and not knowing how far she respected the island's history, felt bound to mention it though urge it he did not.

"Well," said he

A YOUNG MAN OF TWENTY

rise over the sea. She said she thought she could come.

So after spending the next day with his father in the quarries, Jocelyn prepared to leave, and at the time appointed set out from the stone house of his birth in this stone isle to walk to Budmouth-Regis by the path along the beach, Avice having some time earlier gone down to see some friends ^{at Stokman's Hall} in the Street of Wells, ^{proposed} which was half-way towards the spot of their tryst. The descent soon brought him to the pebble bank, and leaving behind him the last houses of the isle, and the ruins of the village destroyed by the November gale of 1824, he struck out along the narrow thread of land. When he had walked a hundred yards he stopped, turned aside to the pebble ridge which walled out the sea, and sat down to wait

Insert 7.

--to accompany him a little way. If she would agree, he purposed to send his luggage on to the afore-said watering-place, and ask her to walk with him along the beach as far as Henry VIII's castle above the sands where they could stay and see the moon rise over the sea. He would see her nearly all the way back, and there would be ample time after that for him to catch the last train.

"You can reserve your answer till tomorrow", he added.

She hesitated. "I understand you to mean, dear Jocelyn", she said, "that my accompanying you to the castle would signify that I conform to the custom of working the spell?"

"Well, yes", he answered.

"I will think it over tomorrow, and ask mother if I ought to, and decide", said she. "I fear it is heathen and ungodly."

what Christmas will do towards bringing it about."

"My wife opened upon it this mornen: 'Please God, I'll up and see that there wedden,' says she, 'knowing 'em both from their crawling-days.'"

The men moved on, and when they were out of Pierston's hearing the one who had not spoken said to his friend, "Who was that young kimberlin? He don't seem ^{an island} one o' we."

"Oh, he is, though, every ^{stone} inch o' en. He's Mr. Jocelyn Pierston, the ^{stone} stone-merchant's only son up at East ^{quarries} Quarriers. He's to be married to a stylish young body, ^{whose} her mother, a widow ^{woman} woman, carries on the same business as well as she can; but their trade is not a twentieth part of Pierston's. He's worth thousands and thousands, they say, though 'a do live on in the same wold way up in the same wold house. ^{his} This son is ^{doing} ~~doen~~ great things in London as 'a image-carver; and I can mind when, as a boy, 'a first took to carving soldiers out o' bits o' ^{stone} stwone from the soft-bed of his father's quarries; and then 'a made a set o' ^{stone} stwone chess-men, and so 'a got on. He's quite the gent in London, they tell me; and the wonder is that 'a cared to come back here

and pick up little Avice Caro—nice maid as she is ^{not} notwithstanding. . . . Hullo! there's to be a change in the weather soon."

Meanwhile the subject of their remarks waited at the appointed place till seven o'clock, the hour named between himself and his affianced, had struck. Almost at the moment he saw a figure coming forward from the last lamp at the bottom of the hill. ^{He meant to conform to the custom.} But the figure speedily resolved itself into that of a boy, who, advancing to Jocelyn, inquired if he were Mr. Pierston, and handed him a note.

Insert 8
Letter as given in I.L.N.

I shall be sorry if I grieve you at all, but I have thought over your inquiry, and cannot agree to conform to the old pagan custom (or whatever it is) of the isle. I did not expect you to ask me so suddenly, or I should have been more positive at the time it was mentioned. As I was quite aware that you merely asked and did not press me, I knew that this decision will not disturb you for long, that you will understand my feelings, and, above all, think the better of it in time to come.

And if we were unfortunate the trial of it, we could never marry could we, honorably? This is an object, which I am sure you have not thought of, and will, I know, share with me.

I am sorry that the custom, uncivilized as it is, which has prevailed in our families on both sides for so many centuries, should thus be brought to an end by you and me, and I am the more sorry in that it prevents my bidding you farewell. However, you will come again soon, will you not, dear Jocelyn, and then the time will soon draw on when no more farewells will be required.

Always and ever yours,
"Avice".

"I am sure that this decision will not disturb you much; that you will understand my modern feelings, and think no worse of me for them. And, dear, if it were to be done, and we were unfortunate in it, we might both have enough old family feeling to think, like our forefathers, and possibly your father, that we could not marry honorably; and hence we might be made unhappy.

"However, you will come again shortly, will you not, dear Jocelyn?—and then the time will soon draw on when no more good-byes will be required.

"Always and ever yours,

"AVICE."

ordered article.

Jocelyn, having read the letter, was surprised at the naïveté it showed, and at Avice and her mother's antiquated simplicity in supposing that to be still a grave and operating principle which was a bygone barbarism to himself and other absentees from the island. His father, as a money-maker, might have practical wishes on the matter of descendants which lent plausibility to the conjecture of Avice and her mother; but to Jocelyn he had never expressed himself in favor of the ancient ways, old-fashioned as he was.

Amused, therefore, at her regard of herself as modern, Jocelyn was disappointed and a little vexed that such an unforeseen reason

should have deprived him of her company. How the old ideas survived under the new education!

The reader is asked to remember that the date, though recent in the history of the Isle of Slingers, was more than forty years ago.

Feeling that the evening seemed ^{very} lowering, yet indisposed to go back and hire a vehicle, he went on quickly alone. In such an exposed spot the night wind was gusty, and the sea behind the pebble barrier kicked and flounced in complex rhythms, which could be translated equally well as shocks of battle or shouts of thanksgiving.

Presently on the pale road before him he discerned a figure, the figure of a woman. He remembered that a woman passed him while he was reading Avice's letter by the last lamp, and now he was overtaking her.

He did hope for a moment that it might be Avice, with a changed mind. But it was not she, nor anybody like her. It was a taller, squarer form than that of his betrothed, and, although the season was only autumn, she was wrapped in furs, or in thick and heavy clothing of some kind.

He soon advanced abreast of her, and could get glimpses of her profile against the roadstead lights. It was dignified, arresting—that of a very Juno. Nothing more classical had he ever seen. She walked at a swinging pace, yet with such ease and power that there was but little difference in their rate of speed for several minutes; and during this time he regarded and conjectured. However, he was about to pass her by when she suddenly turned and addressed him.

“Mr. Pierston, I think, of East ^{Mahe} Quarriers?”

He assented, and could just discern what a handsome, commanding, imperious face it was—quite of a piece with the proud tones of her voice. She was a new type altogether in his experience; and her accent was not so local as Avice's.

“Can you tell me the time, please?”

He looked at his watch by the aid of a light, and in telling her that it was a quarter past seven observed, by the momentary gleam of his match, that her eyes looked a little red and chafed, as if with weeping.

“Mr. Pierston, will you forgive what will appear very strange to you, I dare say? That is, may I ask you to lend me some money for a

day or two? I have been so foolish as to leave my purse on the dressing-table."

It did appear strange; and yet there were features in the young lady's personality which assured him in a moment that she was not an impostor. He yielded to her request, and put his hand in his pocket. Here it remained for a moment. How much did she mean by the words "some money?" The Junonian quality of her form and manner made him throw himself by an impulse into harmony with her, and he responded regally. He scented a romance. He handed her five pounds.

His munificence caused her no apparent surprise. "It is quite enough, thank you," she remarked quietly, as he announced the sum, lest she should be unable to see it for herself.

While overtaking and conversing with her he had not observed that the rising wind, which had proceeded from puffing to growling and from growling to screeching, with the accustomed suddenness of its changes here, had at length brought what it promised by these vagaries—rain. The drops, which had at first hit their left cheeks like the pellets of a pop-gun, soon assumed the character of a raking fusillade from the bank adjoining, one shot of

which was sufficiently smart to go through Jocelyn's sleeve. The tall girl turned, and seemed to be somewhat concerned at an onset which she had plainly not foreseen before her starting.

"We must take shelter," said Jocelyn.

"But where?" said she.

To windward was the long, monotonous bank, too obtusely piled to afford a screen, over which they could hear the canine crunching of pebbles by the sea without; on their right stretched the inner bay or roadstead, the distant riding-lights of the ships, now dim and glimmering; behind them a faint spark here and there in the lower sky showed where the island rose; before there was nothing definite, and could be nothing, till they reached a precarious wood bridge, a mile farther on, Henry the Eighth's Castle being a little farther still.

But just within the summit of the bank, whither it had apparently been hauled to be out of the way of the waves, was one of the local boats called lerrets, bottom upward. As soon as they saw it the pair ran up the pebbly slope towards it by a simultaneous impulse. They then perceived that it had lain there a long time, and were comforted to find it capa-

ble of affording more protection than anybody would have expected ⁱⁿ from a distant view. It formed a shelter or store for the fishermen, the ^{bottom} boom of the lerret being tarred as a roof. By creeping under the bows, which overhung the bank on props to leeward, they made their way within, where, upon some thwarts, oars, and other fragmentary woodwork, lay a mass of dry netting—a whole seine. Upon this they scrambled and sat down, through inability to stand upright.

V

A CHARGE

THE rain fell upon the keel of the old lerret like corn thrown in handfuls by some colossal sower, and darkness set in to its full shade.

They ^{sat} crouched so close to each other that he could feel her furs against him. Neither had spoken since they left the roadway till she said, with attempted unconcern: "This is unfortunate."

He admitted that it was, and found, after a few further remarks had passed, that she certainly had been weeping, there being a suppressed gasp of passionateness in her utterance now and then.

"It is more unfortunate for you, perhaps, than for me," he said, "and I am very sorry that it should be so."

She replied nothing to this, and he added that it was rather a desolate place for a woman, alone and afoot. He hoped nothing serious

had happened to drag her out at such an untoward time.

At first she seemed not at all disposed to show any ~~candor~~^{candour} on her own affairs, and he was left to conjecture as to her history and name, and how she could possibly have known him. But, as the rain gave not the least sign of cessation, he observed: "I think we shall have to go back."

"Never!" said she, and the firmness with which she closed her lips was audible in the word.

"Why not?" he inquired.

"There are good reasons."

"I cannot understand how you should know me, while I have no knowledge of you."

"Oh, but you know me—about me, at least."

"Indeed I don't. How should I? You are a kimberlin."

"I am not. I am a ^mreal islander—or was, rather. . . Haven't you heard of the Best-Bed Stone Company?"

"I should think so! They tried to ruin my father by getting away his trade—or, at least, the founder of the company did—old Bencomb."

"He's my father!"

"Indeed! I am sorry I should have spoken so disrespectfully of him, for I never knew him personally. After making over his large business to the company, he retired, I believe, to London?"

"Yes. Our house, or rather his, not mine, is at South Kensington. We have lived there for years. But we have been tenants of Syl-^{the New}vania Castle on the island here, this season. We took it for a month or two of the owner, who is away."

"Then I have been staying quite near you, Miss Bencomb. My father's is a comparatively humble residence hard by."

"But he could afford a much bigger one if he chose."

"You have heard so? I don't know. He doesn't tell me much of his affairs."

"My father," she burst out, suddenly, "is always scolding me for my extravagance! And he has been doing it to-day more than ever. He said I go shopping in town to simply a diabolical extent, and exceed my allowance!"

"Was that this evening?"

"Yes. And then it reached such a storm of passion between us that I pretended to re-

tire to my room for the rest of the evening, but I slipped out, and I am never going back home again."

"What will you do?"

"I shall go first to my aunt in London, and if she won't have me, I'll work for a living. I have left my father forever! What I should have done if I had not met you I cannot tell—I must have walked all the way to London, I suppose. Now I shall take the train as soon as I reach the mainland."

"If you ever do in this hurricane."

"I must sit here till it stops." *scalls*

And there on the nets they sat. Pierston knew of old Bencomb as his father's bitterest enemy, who had made a great fortune by swallowing up the small stone-merchants, but had found Jocelyn's sire a trifle too big to digest—the latter being, in fact, the chief rival of the Best-Bed Company to that day. Jocelyn thought it strange that he should be thrown by fate into a position to play the son of the Montagues to this daughter of the Capulets.

As they talked there was a mutual instinct to drop their voices, and on this account the roar of the storm necessitated their drawing quite close together. Something tender came

into their tones as quarter-hour *time* after quarter-hour went on, and they forgot the lapse of time. It was quite late when she started up, alarmed at her position.

"Rain or no rain, I can stay no longer," she said.

"Do come back," said he, taking her hand.

"I'll return with you. My train has gone."

"No; I shall go on, and get a lodging in Budmouth town, if ever I reach it."

"It is so late that there will be no house open, except a little place near the station, where you won't care to stay. However, if you are determined, I will show you the way. I cannot leave you. It would be too awkward for you to go there alone."

She persisted, and they started through the twanging and spinning storm. The sea rolled and rose so high on their left, and was so near them on their right, that it seemed as if they were traversing its bottom, like the Children of Israel. Nothing but the frail bank of pebbles divided them from the raging gulf without, and at every bang of the tide against it the ground shook, the shingle clashed, the spray rose vertically and was blown over their heads. Quantities of sea-water trickled

through the pebble wall, and ran in rivulets across their path to join the sea within. The "island" was an island still.

They had not realized the force of the elements till now. Pedestrians had often been blown into the sea hereabout and drowned, owing to a sudden breach in the bank; which, however, had something of a ^{spectral} supernatural ^{power} in being able to close up and join itself together again after ^{any} such disruption, like Satan's form when, cut in two by the sword of Michael.

"The ethereal substance closed.
Not long divisible."

Her clothing offered more resistance to the wind than his, and she was consequently in the greater danger. ~~It~~ ^{It} was impossible to refuse his proffered aid. First he gave his arm, but the wind tore them apart as easily as coupled cherries. He steadied her bodily by encircling her waist with his arm; and she made no objection.

^{No space. 12ⁿ} Somewhere about this time—it might have been sooner, ^{it} might have been later—he became ^{conscious} of a sensation which, in its in-

ipient and unrecognized form, had lurked within him from some unnoticed moment when he was sitting close to ^{her} his new friend under the lerret. Though a young man, he was too old a hand not to know what this was, and felt ^{considerably} alarmed—even dismayed. It meant a possible migration of the Well-Beloved. The thing had not, however, taken place; and he went on thinking how soft and warm ^{she} the lady was in her fur covering, as he held her so tightly; the only dry spots in the clothing of either being her left side and his right, where they excluded the rain by their mutual pressure.

As soon as they had crossed the ferry bridge there was a little more shelter, but he did not relinquish his hold till she requested him. They passed the ruined castle, and, having left the island far behind them, trod mile after mile till they drew near to the outskirts of the neighboring watering-place. Into it they plodded without pause, crossing the harbor bridge about midnight, wet to the skin.

He pitied her, and, while he wondered at it, admired her determination. The houses facing the bay now sheltered them completely, and they reached the vicinity of the new rail-

way terminus (which ^{if no} the station was at this date) without difficulty. As he had said, there was only one house open hereabout, a little temperance ^{hotel} inn, where the people stayed up for the arrival of the morning mail and passengers from the Channel boat. Their application for admission led to the withdrawal of a bolt, and they stood within the gaslight of the passage. *modern world.*

He could see now that though she was such a fine figure, quite as tall as himself, she ^{is years.} was ^{not much more than a school-girl} but in the bloom of young womanhood in years. Her face was certainly striking, though rather by its imperiousness than its beauty; and the beating of the wind and rain and spray had inflamed her cheeks to peony hues.

She persisted in the determination to go on to London by an early morning train, and he therefore offered advice on lesser matters only. "In that case," he said, "you must go ^{on} up to your room and send down your things, that they may be dried by the fire immediately, or they will not be ready. I will tell the servant to do this, and send you up something to eat."

She assented to his proposal, without, how-

ever, showing any marks of gratitude; and when she had gone ^{ear} Pierston despatched her the light supper promised by the sleepy girl who was "night porter" at this establishment. He felt ravenously hungry himself, and set about drying his clothes as well as he could and eating at the same time.

At first he was in doubt what to do, but soon decided to stay where he was till the morrow. By the aid of some temporary wraps, and some slippers from the cupboard, he was contriving to make himself comfortable when the maid-servant came downstairs with a damp armful of woman's raiment.

Pierston withdrew from the fire. The maid-servant knelt down before the blaze and held up with extended arms one of the habiliments of the Juno upstairs, from which a cloud of steam began to rise. As she knelt, the girl nodded forward, recovered herself, and nodded again.

"You are sleepy, my girl," said ^{ea} Pierston.

"Yes, sir; I have been up a long time. When nobody comes I lie down on the couch in the other room."

"Then I'll relieve you of that; go and lie down in the other room, just as if we were not

here. I'll dry the clothing and put the articles here in a heap, which you can take up to the young lady in the morning."

The "night porter" thanked him and left the room, and he soon heard her snoring from the adjoining apartment. Then Jocelyn opened proceedings, overhauling the robes and extending them one by one. As the steam went up he fell into a reverie. He again became conscious of the change which had been

impregnated initiated during the walk. The Well-Beloved was moving house—had gone over to the wearer of this attire. *and he passed each of the articles of apparel* In the course of ten minutes he adored her.

And how about little Avice Caro? He did not think of her as before.

He was not sure that he had ever seen the real Beloved in that friend of his youth, solicitous as he was for her welfare. But, loving her or not, he perceived that the spirit, emanation, idealism, which called itself his Love was fitting stealthily from some remoter figure to the near one in the chamber overhead.

Avice had not kept her engagement to meet him in the lonely ruin, fearing her own im-

aginings. But he, in fact, more than she, had been educated out of the island innocence

insert 9.

---and regarded the fair, white linen that screened his face from the fire with a curious interest. His eyes traced the pattern of the wondrous flowers and leaves in the delicate lace-work, the wheels, rackets, quatrefoils, and spirals of the embroidery, all the while that their owner above was little thinking of the care he was taking that she should not get cold. The fabric seemed almost part and parcel of her queenly person.

the unrevocable ratification of their betrothal had not been reached. - Still, he was bound to waver for her.

VI

ON THE BRINK

MISS BENCOMB was leaving the hotel for the ^{station} railway, which was quite near at hand, and had only recently been opened, as if on purpose for this event. At Jocelyn's suggestion she wrote a ^{telegram} message to inform her father that she had gone to her aunt's, with a view to allaying anxiety and deterring pursuit. They walked together to the platform and bade each other good-bye; each obtained a ticket independently, and Jocelyn got his luggage from the cloak-room.

On the platform they encountered each other again, and there was a light in their glances at each other which said, as by a flash-telegraph, "We are bound for the same town, why not enter the same compartment?"

They did.

She took a corner seat, with her back to the engine; he sat opposite. The guard looked

in, thought they were lovers, and did not show other travellers into that compartment. They talked on strictly ordinary matters—what she thought he did not know—but at every stopping station he dreaded intrusion. Before they were half way to London the event he had just begun to realize ^{se} was a patent fact. The Beloved was again embodied; she filled every fibre and curve of ^{his heart} this woman's form.

^{had} Drawing near the great London station was like drawing near Doomsday. How should he leave her in the turmoil of a ^{Waterloo Bridge} crowded city street? She seemed quite unprepared for the rattle of the scene. He asked her where her aunt lived.

"Bayswater," said Miss Bencomb.

He called a cab, and proposed that she should share it till they arrived at her aunt's, whose residence lay not much out of the way to his own. Try as he would, he could not ascertain if she understood his feelings, but she assented to his offer and entered the vehicle.

"We are old friends," he said, as they drove onward.

"Indeed we are," she answered, without smiling.

"But hereditarily we are mortal enemies, dear Juliet."

"Yes— What did you say?"

"I said Juliet."

She laughed in a half-proud way, and murmured: "Your father is my father's enemy, and my father is mine. Yes, it is so." And then their eyes caught each other's glance.

"My queenly darling!" he burst out; "instead of going to your aunt's, will you come and marry me?"

A flush covered her over, which seemed akin to a flush of rage. It was not exactly that, but she was excited. She did not answer, and he feared he had mortally offended her dignity. Perhaps she had only made use of him as a convenient aid to her intentions. However, he went on:

"Your father would not be able to reclaim you then! After all, this is not so precipitate as it seems. You know all about me, my history, my prospects. I know all about you. Our families have been neighbors on that isle for hundreds of years, though you are now such a London product."

"Will you ever be a Royal Academician?"

she asked, musingly, her excitement having calmed down.

"I hope to be—I *will* be, if you will be my wife."

She His companion looked at him long.

"Think what a short way out of your difficulty this would be," he *replied* ~~continued~~. "No bother about aunts, no fetching home by an angry father."

It seemed to decide her. She yielded to his embrace.

"How long will it take to marry?" Miss Bencomb asked, *by-and-by*, with obvious self-repression.

"We could do it to-morrow. I could get to Doctors' Commons by noon to-day, and the license would be ready by to-morrow morning."

"I won't go to my aunt's, I will be an independent woman! I have been reprimanded as if I were a child of six. I'll be your wife if it is as easy as you say."

They stopped the cab while they held a consultation. Pierston had rooms and a studio in the neighborhood of Campden Hill; but it would be hardly desirable to take her thither till they were married. They decided to go to a hotel.

Changing their direction, therefore, they went back to the Strand, and soon ensconced themselves in one of the venerable old taverns of Covent Garden, a precinct which in those days was frequented by West-country people. Jocelyn then left her and proceeded on his errand eastward.

It was about three o'clock when, having arranged all preliminaries necessitated by this sudden change of front, he began strolling slowly back; he felt bewildered, and to walk was a relief. Gazing occasionally into this shop window and that, he called a hansom as by an inspiration, and directed the driver to "Mellstock Gardens." Arrived here, he rang the bell of a studio, and in a minute or two it was answered by a young man in shirt-sleeves, about his own age, with a great smeared palette on his left thumb.

"Oh, you, Pierston! I thought you were in the country. Come in. I'm awfully glad of this. I am here in town finishing off a painting for an American, who wants to take it back with him."

Pierston followed his friend into the painting-room, where a pretty young woman was sitting sewing. At a signal from the painter she disappeared without speaking.

Insert 10

--- as Mr. and Miss Pearston in one of the establishments off that thoroughfare.

Somers, you must just mean to say that I have something to tell."

Pierston had sat down in an arm-chair, and Somers had resumed his painting. When a servant had brought in brandy to soothe Pierston's nerves, and soda to take off the injurious effects of the brandy, and milk to take off the depleting effects of the soda, Jocelyn began his narrative, addressing it rather to Somers's Gothic chimneypiece, and Somers's Gothic clock, and Somers's Gothic rugs, than to Somers himself, who stood at his picture a little behind his friend.

"Before I tell you what has happened to me," Pierston said, "I want to let you know the manner of man I am."

"Lord — I know already!"

"No, you don't. It is a sort of thing one doesn't like to talk of. I lie awake at night thinking about it."

"No!" said Somers, with more sympathy, seeing that his friend was really troubled.

"I am under a curious curse or influence. I am posed, puzzled, and perplexed by the leger-demain of a creature — a deity rather; by Aphrodite, as a poet would put it, as I should put it myself in marble. . . . But I forget — this is not to be a deprecatory wail, but a defence

This is to be a sort of Apologia pro vita mea."

"That's better. Fire away!"

Very well.

"YOU, Somers, are not, I know, one of those ^{*in bondage to the gigantic*} who continue to indulge ^{*in the world-wide*} in the world-wide, ^{*romantic*} fond superstition that the Beloved One of any man always, or even usually, cares to remain in one corporeal nook or shell for any great length of time, however much he may wish her to do so. If I am wrong, and you do still hold to that ancient error—well, my story will seem rather queer."

"Suppose you say some men, not any man."

"All right—I'll say one man, this man only, if you are so particular. We are a strange, visionary race down where I come from, and perhaps that accounts for it. The Beloved of this one man, then, has had many incarnations — too many to describe in detail. Each shape, or embodiment, has been a temporary residence only, ^{*into*} which she has entered, lived in a while, and made her exit from, leaving the

substance, so far as I have been concerned, a corpse, worse luck! Now, there is no spiritualistic nonsense in this—it is simple fact, put in the plain form that the ^{earliest and} conventional public are afraid of. So much for the principle."

"Good. Go on."

"Well; the first embodiment of her occurred, so nearly as I can recollect, when I was about the age of nine. Her vehicle was a little blue-eyed girl of eight or so, one of a family of eleven, with flaxen hair about her shoulders, which attempted to curl, but ignominiously failed, hanging like chimney-crooks only. This defect used rather to trouble me; and was, I believe, one of the main reasons of my Beloved's departure from that tenement. I cannot remember with any exactness when the departure occurred. I know it was after I had kissed my little friend in a garden-seat on a hot noontide, under a ^{Chinese} blue ^{gingham} umbrella, which we had opened over us as we sat, that passers through East ^{Quarters} might not observe our marks of affection, forgetting that our screen must attract more attention than our persons.

"When the whole dream came to an end through her father leaving the island, I thought

my Well-Beloved had gone forever (being then in the unpractised condition of Adam at sight of the first sunset). But she had not. Laura had gone forever, but not my ^{dear} Beloved.

"For some months after I had done crying for the flaxen-haired edition of her, my Love did not reappear. Then she came suddenly, unexpectedly, in a situation I should never have predicted. I was standing on the ^{curb-}stone of the pavement in Budmouth-Regis, outside the Preparatory School, looking across towards the sea, when a middle-aged gentleman on horseback, and beside him a young lady, also mounted, passed down the street. The girl turned her head, and—possibly because I was gaping at her in awkward admiration, or smiling myself—smiled at me. Having ridden a few paces, she looked round again and smiled.

"It was enough, more than enough, to set me on fire. I understood in a moment the information conveyed to me by my emotion—the Well-Beloved had reappeared. This second form in which it had pleased her to take up her abode was quite a grown young woman's, darker in complexion than the first. Her hair, also worn in a knot, was of an or-

dinary brown, and so, I think, were her eyes, but the niceties of her features were not to be gathered so cursorily. However, there sat my coveted one, re-embodied; and, bidding my schoolmates a hasty farewell as soon as I could do so without suspicion, I hurried along the Esplanade in the direction she and her father had ridden. But they had put their horses to a canter, and I could not see which way they had gone. In the greatest misery I turned down a side street, but was soon elevated to a state of excitement by seeing the same pair galloping towards me. Flushing up to my hair, I stopped and heroically faced her as she passed. She smiled again, but, alas! upon my Love's cheek there was no blush of passion for me."

Pierston paused and drank from his glass as he lived for a brief moment in the scene he had conjured up. Somers reserved his comments, and Jocelyn continued:

"That afternoon I idled about the streets, looking for her in vain. When I next saw one of the boys who had been with me at her first passing I stealthily reminded him of the incident, and asked if he knew the riders.

"'Oh yes,' he said. 'That was Colonel Targe and his daughter Elsie.'

"'How old do you think she is?' said I, a sense of disparity in our ages disturbing my mind.

"'Oh—nineteen, I think they say. She's going to be married the day after to-morrow to Captain Popp, of the 501st, and they are ordered off to India at once.'

"The grief which I experienced at this intelligence was such that at dusk I went away to the edge of the harbor, intending to put an end to myself there and then. But I had been told that crabs had been found clinging to the dead faces of persons who had fallen in thereabout, leisurely eating them, and the idea of such an unpleasant contingency deterred me. I should state that the marriage of my Beloved concerned me little; it was her departure that broke my heart. I never saw her again.

"Though I had already learned that the absence of the corporeal matter did not involve the absence of the informing spirit, I could scarce bring myself to believe that in this case it was possible for her to return to my view without the form she had last inhabited.

"But she did.

"It was not, however, till after a good space of time, during which I passed through that bearish age in boys, their early teens, when girls are their especial contempt. I was about seventeen, and was sitting one evening over a cup of tea in a ^{restaurant of a confectioner's} at the very same watering-place, when opposite me a lady took her seat with a little girl. We looked at each other a while, the child made advances, till I said, 'She's a good little thing.'

"The lady assented, and made a further remark.

"She has the soft ^{dark} fine eyes of her mother,' said I.

"Do you think her eyes are good?' asks the lady, as if she had not heard what she had heard most—the last three words of my opinion.

"Yes—for copies,' said I, regarding her.

"After this we got on very well. She informed me that her husband had gone out in a yacht, and I said it was a pity he didn't take her with him for the airing. She gradually disclosed herself in the character of a deserted young wife, and later on I met her in the street without the child. She was going to

the landing-stage to meet her husband, so she told me; but she did not know the way.

"I offered to show her, and did so. I will not go into particulars, but I afterwards saw her several times, and soon discovered that the Beloved (as to whose whereabouts I had been at fault so long) lurked here. Though why she had chosen this tantalizing situation of an inaccessible matron's form, when so many others offered, it was beyond me to discover. The whole affair ended innocently enough, when the lady left the town with her husband and child; she seemed to regard our acquaintance as a flirtation; yet it was anything but a flirtation for me!

No Space in I LN

"Why should I tell the rest of the tantalizing tale! After this the Well-Beloved put herself in evidence with greater and greater frequency, and it would be impossible for me to give you details of her various incarnations. She came nine times in the course of the two or three ensuing years. Four times she masqueraded as a brunette, twice as a pale-haired creature, and two or three times under a complexion neither light nor dark. Sometimes she was a tall, fine girl, but more often, I

think, she preferred to slip into the skin of a lithe, airy being, of no great stature. I grew so accustomed to these exits and entrances that I resigned myself to them quite passively, talked to her, kissed her, corresponded with her, ached for her, in each of her several guises. So it went on until a month ago. And then for the first time I was puzzled. She either had, or she had not, entered the person of Avice Caro, a young girl I had known from infancy. Upon the whole, I have decided that, after all, she did not enter the form of Avice Caro, because I retain so great a respect for her still."

Pierston here gave in brief the history of his revived comradeship with Avice, the verge of the engagement to which they had reached and its unexpected rupture by him merely through his meeting with a woman into whom the Well-Beloved unmistakably moved under his very eyes—by name Miss Marcia Bencomb. He described their spontaneous decision to marry offhand; and then he put it to Somers whether he ought to marry or not—her or anybody else—in such circumstances.

"Certainly not," said Somers. "Though, if

anybody, little Avice. But not even her. You are like other men, only rather worse. Essentially, all men are fickle, like you, but not with such perceptiveness.

activity, such, open-eyed
my dear Somers, Surely fickle is not the word? Fickleness means getting weary of a thing while the *insert*

insert
 But I am faithful to what I fancy each woman to be till I come to close quarters with her.

Nothing from each to each individual has been anything but a pleasure for me—certainly not a wanton game of my investigation. *Somers,* to see the creature who has hitherto been perfect, divine, lose under your very gaze the divinity which has informed her, grow commonplace, turn from flame to ashes, from a radiant vitality to a corpse, is anything but a pleasure for any man, and has been nothing less than a racking spectacle to my sight. Each mournful emptied shape stands ever after like the nest of some beautiful bird from which the inhabitant has departed and left it to fill with snow. I have been absolutely miserable when I have looked in a face for *Her* I used to see there, and *could* see *Her* there no more."

you have thought
for me
ready to weep

"You ought not to marry," repeated Somers.

"Perhaps I oughtn't to! Though poor Marcia will be compromised, I'm afraid, if I don't . . . Was I not right in saying I am accountable in this thing? Fortunately nobody but myself has suffered on account of it till now. Knowing what to expect, I have seldom ventured on a close acquaintance with any woman, in fear of prematurely driving away the dear one in her; who, however, has time gone off just the same."

Pierston soon after took his leave. A friend's advice on such a subject weighs little. He quickly returned to Miss Berncomb.

She was different now. Anxiety had visibly brought her down a notch or two, undone a few degrees of that haughty curl which her lip could occasionally assume. "How long you have been away!" she said, with a show of impatience, leaning her face against

"Never mind, darling. It is all arranged," said he. "We shall be able to marry in a few days." *End of chapter in ILN.*

"Not to-morrow?"

"We can't to-morrow. We have not been here quite long enough."

"But how did the people at Doctors' Commons know that?"

"Well—I forgot that residence, real or assumed, was necessary, and unfortunately admitted that we had only just arrived."

"Oh, how stupid! But it can't be helped now. I think, dear, I should have known better, however."

Insert 12.

--- not to embark on matrimony is just the featherweight required to turn the scale and make a man do it.

Chap. VIII in I.L.M.
A MISCALCULATION
(Brief synopsis given here)

Jocelyn and Marcia marry, go to the continent, and return after two months to Kensington. Marcia's parents communicate seldom with them. Both are unhappy at the rash marriage and find life together miserable. One chief point of conflict is the old enmity between their fathers. M's. parents return to London after a trip to the coast, are willing to receive M. at their home but not J.

M. and J. quarrel often, and find their love absolutely dead. J. fears constantly the appearance of the Well-Beloved in another form, but is true to M.

The Bencomb's decide to go to America for pleasure. M's temper gets the better of her, and she rails at J. They have their worst quarrel, but continue to live together for four years, when they separate by mutual consent.

The only incidents common to both publications are:
p.65- incident of letter from old lover of M's. (See book for markings).
p.67. quarrel in part. (See book for markings.)

day or two, a letter might be sent to them and their answer received. I have a mind to write."

Pierston expressed his doubts of the wisdom of this course, which seemed to make her desire it the more, and the result was a tiff between them. "Since we are obliged to delay it, I won't marry without their consent!" she cried at last, passionately.

"Very well then, dear. Write," he said.

When they were again indoors she sat down to a note, but after a while threw aside her pen despairingly. "No; I cannot do it!" she said. "I can't bend my pride to such a job. Will you write for me, Jocelyn?"

"I? I don't see why I should be the one, particularly as I think it premature."

"But you have not quarrelled with my father as I have done."

"Well, no. But there is a long-standing antagonism, which would make it odd in me to write. Wait till we are married, and then I will write. Not till then."

"Then I suppose I must. You don't know my father. He might forgive me marrying into any other family without his knowledge, but he thinks so meanly of yours on account

Some of the communication is in 1st, but not changed because circumstances of plot.

He, gloomily: "Well, I don't care to hear about that. To my mind, this sort of thing is decidedly unpleasant, though you treat it so lightly." ^{no more about that}

"Well," she pouted, "I have only done half what you have done!"

"What's that?"

"I have only proved false through forgetfulness, but you have while remembering!"

"Oh yes; of course you can use *Avice Caro* as a retort. But don't vex me about her, and make me do such an unexpected thing as regret the falseness."

She shut her mouth tight, and her face flushed.

The next morning there did come an answer to the letter asking her parents' consent to her union with him; but, to Marcia's amazement, her father took a line quite other than the one she had expected him to take. Whether she had compromised herself or whether she had not seemed a question for the future rather than the present with him, a native islander, born when old island marriage views prevailed in families; he was fixed in his disapproval of her marriage with a hated Pierston. He did not consent; he would not say more till he

1st return to his parent in London and that unwillingly to receive. Living about this is what Pierston meant.

could see her: if she had any sense at all she would, if still unmarried, return to the home from which she had evidently been enticed. He would then see what he could do for her in the desperate circumstances she had made for herself; otherwise he would do nothing.

Pierston could not help being sarcastic at her father's evidently low estimate of him and his belongings; and Marcia took umbrage at his sarcasm.

"I am the one deserving of satire if anybody," she said. "I begin to feel I was a foolish girl to run away from a father for such a trumpery reason as a little scolding because I had exceeded my allowance."

"I advised you to go back, Marcia."

"In a sort of way; not in the right tone. You spoke most contemptuously of my father as a merchant."

"I couldn't speak otherwise of him than I did, I'm afraid, knowing what—"

"Nothing—to you, Marcia, beyond what is matter of common notoriety. Everybody knows that at one time he made it the business of his life to ruin my father; and the way

he alludes to me in that letter shows that his enmity still continues."

"That miser ruined by an open-handed man like my father!" said she. "It is like your people's misrepresentations to say that."

Marcia's eyes flashed and her face burned with an angry heat, the enhanced beauty which this warmth might have brought being killed by the rectilinear sternness of countenance that came therewith.

"Marcia, this temper is too exasperating! I could give you every step of the proceeding in detail — anybody could — the getting the quarries one by one, and everything, my father only holding his own by the most desperate courage. There is no blinking facts. Our parents' relations are an ugly fact in the circumstances of us two people who want to marry, and we are just beginning to perceive and how we are going to get over it I cannot tell."

She said, steadily. "I don't think we shall get over it at all!"

"We may not — we may not — altogether," Pierston murmured, as he gazed at the picture of scorn presented by his Juno's classical face and dark eyes.

This conversation I saw in 12th. but only Switzer, her and later are identical.

"Unless you beg my pardon for having behaved so!"

Pierston could not quite bring himself to see that he had behaved badly to his too imperious lady, and declined to ask forgiveness for what he had not done.

She thereupon left the room. Later in the day she re-entered and broke a silence by saying, bitterly: "I showed temper just now, as you told me. But things have causes, and it is perhaps a mistake that you should have deserted Avice for me. Instead of wedding Rosaline, Romeo must needs go eloping with Juliet. It was a fortunate thing for the affections of those two Veronese lovers that they died when they did. In a short time the enmity of their families would have proved a fruitful source of dissension; Juliet would have gone back to her people, he to his; the subject would have split them as much as it splits us."

Pierston laughed a little. But Marcia was painfully serious, as he found at tea-time, when she said that since his refusal to beg her pardon she had been thinking over the matter and had resolved to go to her aunt's, after all — at any rate till her father could be induced to

Romeo is 12th

agree to their union. Pierston was as chilled by this resolve of hers as he was surprised at her independence in circumstances which usually make women the reverse. But he put no obstacles in her way, and, with a kiss strangely cold after their recent ardor, the Romeo of the freestone Montagues went out of the hotel, to avoid even the appearance of coercing his Juliet of the rival house. When he returned she was gone.

A correspondence began between these too hastily pledged ones, and it was carried on in terms of serious reasoning upon their awkward situation on account of the family feud. They saw their recent love as what it was:

"Too rash, too unadvised, too sudden;
Too like the lightning" . . .

They saw it with an eye whose calmness, coldness, and, it must be added, wisdom, did not promise well for their reunion.

Their debates were clinched by a final letter from Marcia, sent from no other place than her recently left home in the isle. She informed him that her father had appeared suddenly at her aunt's, and had induced her to

go home with him. She had told her father all the circumstances of their elopement, and what mere accidents had caused it; he had persuaded her on what she had almost been convinced of by their disagreement, that all thought of their marriage should be at least postponed for the present; any awkwardness, and even scandal, being better than that they should immediately unite themselves for life on the strength of a two or three days' passion, and be the wretched victims of a situation they could never change.

Pierston saw plainly enough that he owed it to her father being a born islander, with all the ancient island notions of the sexes lying underneath his acquired conventions, that the stone-merchant did not immediately insist upon the usual remedy for a daughter's precipitancy of action, but preferred to await issues.

But the young man still thought that Marcia herself, when her temper had quite cooled and she was more conscious of her real position, would return to him in spite of the family hostility. There was no social reason against such a step. In birth the pair were about on one plane; and though Marcia's family had gained a start in the accumulation of wealth

None in / CN

and in the beginnings of social distinction, which lent color to the feeling that the advantages of the match would be mainly on one side, Pierston was a sculptor who might rise to fame; so that potentially their marriage could not be considered inauspicious for a woman who, beyond being the probable heiress to a considerable fortune, had no exceptional opportunities.

Thus, though disillusioned, he felt bound in honor to remain on call at his London address as long as there was the slightest chance of Marcia's reappearance, or of the arrival of some message requesting him to join her, that they might, after all, go to the altar together. Yet in the night he seemed to hear sardonic voices and laughter in the wind at this development of his little romance, and during the slow and colorless days he had to sit and behold the mournful departure of his Well-Beloved from the form he had lately cherished, till she had almost vanished away. The exact moment of her complete withdrawal Pierston knew not, but not many lines of her were longer discernible in Marcia's remembered contours, nor many sounds of her in Marcia's recalled accents. Their acquaintance, though

so fervid, had been too brief for such lingering.

There came a time when he learned, through a trustworthy channel, two pieces of news, affecting himself. One was the marriage of Avice Caro with her cousin, the other that the Bencombs had started on a tour round the world, which was to include a visit to a relation of Mr. Bencomb's who was a banker in San Francisco. Since retiring from his former large business the stone-merchant had not known what to do with his leisure, and finding that travel benefited his health he had decided to indulge himself thus. Although he was not so informed, Pierston concluded that Marcia had accompanied her parents, and he was more than ever struck with what this signified—her father's obstinate antagonism to her union with one of his blood and name.

In I. h. N. announcement of marriage in local paper.

After four years of common residence diversified by drawing-room incidents of this lively character, these two irreconcilables parted by common consent. The voyage of M's. parents had implanted in them a zest for the Northwest, already the home of some relatives. M's. father, a man still in full vigor of life except at intervals, found occupation for the leisure which the sale of his business afforded him in investing capital in undertakings commensurate with the scale of the country wherein they were to be carried out; and when in the development of these schemes, he again rejoined his brother in the Western States, M. accompanied him.

The separation was quite of an informal kind, each merely promising the other never to intrude into that other's life again, by written word or personal presence; its object being to undo, as far as lay in their power, the mischief that misapprehension of each other's characters had effected during the past few years.

M. declared she would never return to England, but would make her home with her uncle on the Pacific shore.

"And for my part", she added in this her last letter to him, "I fail to see why, in making each our new laws if we please. This may be an advanced view, but I am not averse to advanced views. If I strictly confine myself to one hemisphere and expect you to do, confine yourself to the other, any new tie we may effect nobody but ourselves. As I shall feel myself at liberty to form such, I accord the same liberty to you."

Whether this advanced idea were a Parthian fling of defiance, which she had no intention whatever of acting on, or whether it were written coolly, as a possible contingency, with an eye on the jilted Indian captain, Pearston had no means of knowing.

A long period of outward stagnation followed the break-up of his house and home.

During the _____

haunting minion of his imagination. Having gone so near to matrimony with Marcia as to apply for a license, he had felt for a long while morally bound to her by the incipient contract, and would not intentionally look about him in search of the vanished Ideality. Thus during the first year of Miss Boncomb's absence, when absolutely bound to keep faith with the elusive one's late incarnation if she should return to claim him, this man of the odd fancy would sometimes tremble at the thought of what would become of his solemn intention if the Phantom were suddenly to disclose herself in an unexpected quarter and seduce him before he was aware. (Once or twice he imagined that he saw her in the distance—at the end of a street, on the far sands of a shore, in a window, in a meadow, at the opposite side of a railway station; but he determinedly turned on his heel and walked the other way. (especially ∇ M. was with her.)

During the many uneventful seasons that followed Marcia's stroke of independence (for which he was not without a secret admiration at times), Jocelyn threw into plastic creations that ever-bubbling spring of emotion which, without some conduit into space, will surge

This Paulina who is L.N. has had to do with the various life of the pair.

upward and ruin all but ^{a man} the greatest men. It was probably owing to this, certainly not on account of any care or anxiety for such a result, that he was successful in his art, successful by a seemingly sudden spurt, which carried him at one bound over the hinderances of years.

He prospered without effort. He was A.R.A.

But recognitions of this sort, social distinctions, which he had once coveted so keenly, seemed to have no utility for him now. ^{By} the accident of being a bachelor, ^{he} was floating in society without any soul-anchorage or ^{spot} shrine that he could call his own; and, for want of a domestic centre round which honors might crystallize, they dispersed ^{in the whole of} ~~impalpably~~ ^{spirit} without accumulating and adding weight to his material well-being. ^{position.}

He would have gone on working with his chisel with just as much zest if his creations had been doomed to meet ^{he seen by} no mortal eye but his own. ^{By} his indifference to the popular reception of his dream-figures, ^{he acquired} ~~lent him~~ a curious artistic aplomb that carried him through the gusts of opinion without suffering them to disturb his inherent bias.

The study of beauty was his only joy, ^{for} years onward. In the streets he would observe a face, or a fraction of a face, which seemed to express to a hair's-breadth in mutable flesh what he was at that moment wishing to express in durable shape. He would dodge and follow the owner like a detective; in omnibus, in cab, in steamboat, through crowds, into shops, churches, theatres, public-houses, and slums—mostly, when at close quarters, to be disappointed for his pains.

In these professional beauty-chases he sometimes cast his eye across the Thames to the wharves on the south side, and to that particular one whereat his father's tons of freestone

12/15

--all familiar to J.--
so persistently as if in time his
father would nibble it all away.

away.

One thing it passed him to understand—on what field of observation the poets and philosophers based their assumption that the passion of love was intensest in youth and burned lower as ^{the years} maturity advanced. It was possibly

^{but it was certainly the fact}
 because of his utter domestic loneliness that, during the productive interval ^{he and} which followed the first years of Marcia's departure, when he was drifting along from five-and-twenty to ^{the} ~~eight~~-and-thirty ^{years ago} Pierston occasionally loved with an ardor—though, it is true, also with a self-control—unknown to him when he was green in judgment.

His whimsical isle-bred fancy had grown to be such an emotion that the Well-Beloved—now again ^{visible}—was always existing somewhere near him. For months he would find her on the stage of a theatre; then she would flit away, leaving the poor, empty carcass that had lodged her to mumm on as best it could without her—a sorry lay figure to his eyes, heaped with imperfections and sullied with commonplace. She would reappear, it might be, in an at first unnoticed lady—met at some fashionable ^{crush} evening-party, exhibition, bazaar, or dinner—to flit from her, in turn, after a few months, and stand as a graceful shop-girl at some large drapery ^{establishment} warehouse into which he had strayed on an unaccustomed errand. Then she would forsake this figure and redisclose herself in the guise of

some popular authoress, ^{liante} piano-player, or fiddleress, at whose shrine he would worship for perhaps a twelvemonth. Once she was a dancing girl at the Royal Moorish Palace of Varieties, though during her whole continuance at that establishment, he never once ^{his beloved} ~~ex-~~ changed a word with her, nor did she ^{while there} first or last ever dream of his existence. He knew that a ten minutes' conversation in the wings with the substance would send the elusive ^{phantom} ~~haunter~~ scurrying fearfully away into some other even less accessible mask-figure.

She was a blonde, a brunette, tall, ^{petite,} ~~petite, ^{svelte,} straight-featured, full, curvilinear. Only one quality remained unalterable ^{in her}—her instability of tenure. In Börne's phrase, nothing was permanent in her but change.~~

"It is odd," he said to himself, "that this experience of mine, or idiosyncrasy, or whatever it is, which would be sheer waste of time for other men, creates sober business for me." For all these dreams he translated into ^{marble} ~~plaster~~ and found that by them he was hitting a public taste he had never deliberately aimed at and mostly despised. He was, in short, in danger of drifting away from a solid artistic reputation to a popularity which might possi-

bly be as brief as it would be brilliant and exciting.

"You will be caught some day, my friend," Somers would occasionally observe to him. "I don't mean to say entangled in anything discreditable, for I admit that you are in practice ^{a moral man} as ideal as in theory, I mean the process will be reversed. Some woman, whose Well-Beloved flits about as yours does now, will catch your eye, and you'll stick to her like a limpet, while she follows her phantom and leaves you to ache as you will."

"You may be right; but I think you are wrong," said Pierston. "As ⁱⁿ flesh she dies daily, like the Apostle's ^{material} corporeal self; because when I grapple with the reality she's no longer in it, so that I cannot stick to one incarnation if I would."

"Wait till you are older," said Somers.

PART SECOND

A YOUNG MAN OF FORTY

Not divisions into
Parts in 12N.

until Chap. VIII.

"The Threatens to Resume
Corporeal Substance".

Then Part II.

A Young Man of Forty.

Not in LLN.

Since Love will needs that I shall love,
Of very force I must agree:
And since no chance may it remove,
In wealth and in adversity
I shall atway myself apply
To serve and suffer patiently."

—SIR T. WYATT.

Arden's Chap. II. is LLN.

I Chap. II. in LLN.

THE OLD PHANTOM BECOMES DISTINCT

In the course of these long years ^{But} Pierston's artistic emotions were abruptly suspended by the news of his father's sudden death at Sandbourne, whither the stone-merchant had ^{catel} gone for a change of air by the advice of his physician.

Mr. Pierston, senior, it must be admitted, had been something miserly in his home life, as Marcia had so rashly reminded his son. But he had never stinted Jocelyn. He had been rather a hard taskmaster, though, as a paymaster, trustworthy; a ready-money man, just and ungenerous. To every one's surprise, the capital he had accumulated in the stone trade was of large amount for a business so unostentatiously carried on—much larger than Jocelyn had ever regarded as possible. While the son had been modelling and chipping his ephemeral fancies into perennial

shape, the father had been persistently chiseling for half a century at the crude original matter of those shapes, the stern, isolated rock in the Channel; and by the aid of his cranes and pulleys, his trolleys and his boats, had sent off his spoil to all parts of Great Britain. When Jocelyn had wound up everything and disposed of the business, as recommended by his father's will, he found himself enabled to add about eighty thousand pounds to the twelve thousand which he already possessed from professional and other sources.

After arranging for the sale of some freehold properties in the island other than quarries—for he did not intend to reside there—he returned to town. He often wondered what had become of Marcia. He had promised never to trouble her; nor for a whole ^{of years} twenty years had he done so; though he had often sighed for her as a friend of sterling common-sense in practical difficulties.

Her parents were, he believed, dead; and she, he knew, had never gone back to the isle. Possibly she had formed some new tie abroad, and had made it next to impossible to discover her by her old name.

A reposeful time ensued. Almost his first

his wife

which she had spoken

entry into society after his father's death occurred one evening when, for want of knowing what better to do, he responded to ^{a card of} an invitation sent by one of the few ladies of rank whom he numbered among his friends, and set out in a cab for the square wherein she lived during three or four months of the year.

The hansom turned the corner, and he obtained a raking view of the houses along the north side, of which hers was one, with the familiar linkman at the door. There were Chinese lanterns, too, on the balcony. He perceived in a moment that the customary

ment 16
-- but in this access of means he considered that it behoved him to make inquiries, so as to ascertain if she wished for an allowance.

Neither letters nor advertisements brought any tidings. Nothing more could be done without personal search, and that he resolved to make the year following, if he heard nothing of her earlier.

Pierston did not wait to take his turn at the door, but unobtrusively alighted some yards off and walked forward. He had to pause a moment behind the wall of spectators which

barred his way, and as he paused some ladies in white cloaks crossed from their carriages to the door on the carpet laid for the purpose. He had not seen their faces, nothing of them but vague forms, and yet he was suddenly seized with a presentiment. Its gist was that he might be going to re-encounter the Well-Beloved that night; after her recent long hiding she meant to reappear and intoxicate him. That liquid sparkle of her eye, that lingual music, that turn of the head, how well he knew it all, despite the many superficial changes! and how instantly he would recognize it under whatever complexion, contour, accent, height, or carriage it might choose to masquerade!

Pierston's other conjecture, that the night was to be a lively political one, received confirmation as soon as he reached the hall, where a simmer of excitement was perceptible as surplus or overflow from above down the staircase—a feature which he had always noticed to be present when any climax or sensation had been reached in the world of party and faction.

"And where have you been keeping yourself so long, young man?" said his hostess,

archly, when he had shaken hands with her. (Pierston was always regarded as a young man, though he was now about forty.) "Oh yes, of course, I remember," she added, looking serious in a moment at thought of his loss. The Countess was a woman with a good-natured manner, verging on that oft-claimed feminine quality, humor, and was quickly sympathetic.

Not in the She then began to tell him of a scandal in the political side to which she nominally belonged, one that had come out of the present crisis; and that, as for herself, she had sworn to abjure politics forever on account of it, so that he was to regard her forthwith as a more neutral householder than ever. By this time some more people had surged upstairs, and Pierston prepared to move on.

"You are looking for somebody—I can see that," said she.

"Yes—a lady," said Pierston.

"Tell me her name, and I'll try to think if she's here."

"I cannot; I don't know it," he said.

"Indeed! What is she like?"

"I cannot describe her, not even her complexion or dress."

Lady Channelcliffe looked a pout, as if she thought he were teasing her, and he moved on in the current. The fact was that, for a moment, Pierston fancied he had ^{discovered her} made the sensational discovery that the One he was in search of lurked in the person of the very hostess he had conversed with, who was charming always, and particularly charming to-night; he was just feeling an incipient consternation at the possibility of such a jade's trick in his Beloved, who had once before chosen to embody herself as a married woman, though, happily, at that time with no serious results. However, he felt that he had been mistaken, and that the fancy had been solely owing to the highly charged electric condition in which he had arrived by reason of his recent isolation.

The whole set of rooms formed one great utterance of the opinions of the hour. The gods of party were present with their embattled seraphim, but the brilliancy of manner and form in the handling of public questions was only less conspicuous than the paucity of original ideas. No principles of wise government had place in any mind, a blunt and jolly personalism as to the Ins and Outs animating all. But Jocelyn's interest did not run in this

88
Miss

stream; he was like a stone in a purling brook, waiting for some peculiar floating object to be brought towards him and to stick upon his mental surface.

Thus ^{he had} looking for the next new version of the fair figure, he did not consider at the moment, though he had done so at other times, that this presentiment of meeting her was, of all presentiments, just the sort of one to work out its own fulfilment.

He looked for her in the knot of persons gathered round a ^{past prime} ~~minister~~ ^{in Ex-Cabinet} minister, who was standing in the middle of the largest room discoursing in the genial, almost jovial, manner natural to him at these times. The two or three ladies forming his audience had been joined by another in black and white, and it was on her that Pierston's attention was directed, as well as the great statesman's, whose first sheer gaze at her, expressing "Who are you?" almost audibly, changed into an interested, listening look as the few words she spoke were uttered — for the ^{minister} minister differed from many of his standing in being extremely careful not to interrupt a timid speaker, giving way in an instant if anybody else began with him. Nobody knew better than himself that

89
his own limitations

of my high
rank indeed

all may learn, and his manner was that of an ^a unconceited man who could catch an idea readily, even if he could not undertake to ^{not} create one.

The lady told her little story—whatever it was Jocelyn could not hear it—the ^{ex-Cabinet} statesman ^{sums} laughed “Haugh-haugh-haugh!”

The lady blushed. Jocelyn, wrought up to a high tension by the aforesaid presentiment that his Shelleyan “One-shape-of-many-names” was about to reappear, paid little heed to the ^{man of state} others, watching for a full view of the lady who had won his attention.

That lady remained for the present partially screened by her neighbors. A diversion was caused by Lady Channelcliff bringing up somebody to present to the ^{political one} ex-minister; the ladies got mixed, and Jocelyn lost sight of the one whom he was beginning to suspect as the stealthily returned absentee.

He looked for her in a ^{the} kindly young lady of the house, his hostess's relation, who appeared to more advantage that night than she had ever done before—in a sky-blue dress, which had nothing between it and the fair skin of her neck, lending her an unusually soft and sylph-like aspect. She saw him, and they converged.

Her look of “What do you think of me *now?*” was suggested, he knew, by the thought that the last time they met she had appeared under the disadvantage of mourning ^{costume} clothes, on a wet day, in a country-house where everybody was cross.

“I have some new photographs, and I want you to tell me whether they are good,” she said. “Mind, you are to tell me truly, and no favor.”

She produced the pictures from an adjoining drawer, and they sat down together upon an ottoman for the purpose of examination. The portraits, taken by the last fashionable photographer, were very good, and he told her so; but as he spoke and compared them his mind was fixed on something else than the mere judgment. He wondered whether the elusive one were indeed in the frame of this girl.

He looked up at her. To his surprise, her mind, too, was on other things bent than on the pictures. Her eyes were glancing away to distant people; she was ^{really} apparently considering the effect she was producing upon them by this cozy tête-à-tête with Pierston, and upon one in particular, a ^{man} man of thirty, of military appearance, whom Pierston did not know.

Quite convinced now that no phantom belonging to him was contained in the outlines of the present young lady, he could coolly ^{criticise} survey her as he responded. They were both doing the same thing—each was pretending to be deeply interested in what the other was talking about, the attention of the two alike flitting away to other corners of the room even when the very point of their discourse was pending.

No, he had not seen her yet. He was not going to see her, apparently, to-night; she was scared away by the twanging political atmosphere. But he still moved on searchingly, ^{speaking to those he knew} hardly heeding certain spectral imps other than

Insert 17

Under the white hair of that ribbanded old man was a forehead grown wrinkled over treaties that had swayed the fortunes of Europe; under the forehead spoke a voice which had numbered sovereigns and heirs-apparent among its listeners; under the voice was a heart that would go inside a hazel-nut shell. Beneath these white ropes of pearls was the pink bosom; beneath the pink bosom the half lung which had, by hook or by crook, to sustain its possessor above-ground till the wedding-day.

host, and almost simultaneously caught sight of the lady who had at first attracted him and then had disappeared. Their eyes met, far off as they were from each other. Pierston laughed inwardly; it was only in ticklish excitement as to whether this was to prove a true *trouvaille*, and with no instinct to mirth; for when under the eyes of his Jill-o'-the-Wisp he was ^{ever} more inclined to palpitate like a sheep in a fair.

However, for the minute he had to converse with his host, Lord Channelcliffe, and almost the first thing that ^{the Earl} friend said to him was, "Who is that pretty woman in the black dress with the white fluff about it and the pearl necklace?"

"I don't know," said Jocelyn, with incipient jealousy; "I was just going to ask the same thing."

"Oh, we shall find out presently, I suppose. I dare say my wife knows." They had parted, when a hand came upon his shoulder. Lord Channelcliffe had turned back for an instant: "I find she is the granddaughter of my father's old friend, the last Lord Hengistbury. Her name is Mrs.—Mrs. Pine-Avon; she lost her husband two or three years ago, very shortly after their marriage."

Lord Channelcliffe became absorbed into some adjoining dignitary of the Church, and Pierston was left to pursue his quest alone. A young friend of his—the Lady Mabella Buttermead, who appeared in a cloud of muslin and was going on to a ball—had been brought against him by the tide. A warm-hearted, emotional girl was Lady Mabella, who laughed at the humorousness of being alive. She asked him whither he was bent, and he told her.

"Oh yes, I know her very well!" said Lady Mabella eagerly. "She told me one day that she particularly wished to meet you. Poor thing—so sad—she lost her husband. Well, it was a long time ago now, certainly! Women ought not to marry and lay themselves open to such catastrophes, ought they, Mr. Pierston? I never shall. I am determined never to run such a risk! Now, do you think I shall?"

"Marry? Oh no; never," said Pierston, dryly.

"That's very comforting." But Mabella was scarcely comfortable under the answer, even though jestingly returned, and she added: "But sometimes I think I may, just for the fun of it. . . . Now we'll steer across to her and catch her, and I'll introduce you. But we shall never get to her at this rate!"

"Never, unless we adopt 'the ugly rush, like the citizens who follow the Lord Mayor's Show."

They talked, and inched towards the desired one, who, as she ^{Talked to} discoursed with a neighbor, seemed one of those

"Female forms, whose gestures beam with mind,"

seen by the poet in his Vision of the Golden City of Islam.

Their progress was continually checked. Pierston was, as he had sometimes seemed to be, in a dream, unable to advance towards the object of pursuit unless he could have gathered up his feet into the air. After ten minutes given to a preoccupied regard of shoulder blades, back hair, glittering head-gear, neck-napes, moles, hairpins, pearl-powder, pimples, minerals cut into facets of many-colored rays, necklace-clasps, fans, stays, the seven styles of elbow and arm, the thirteen varieties of ear, and by using the toes of his dress-boots as colters, with which he ploughed his way and that of Lady Mabella in the direction they were aiming at, he drew near to Mrs. Pine-Avon, who was drinking a cup of tea in the back drawing-room.

"My dear Nichola, we thought we should never get to you, because it is worse to-night, owing to these dreadful politics! But we've done it." And she proceeded to tell her friend of Pierston's existence hard by.

It seemed that the widow really did wish to know him, and that Lady Mabella Buttermead had not indulged in one of the too frequent inventions of that kind. When the youngest of the trio had made the pair acquainted with each other she left them to talk to a younger man than the sculptor.

Mrs. Pine-Avon's black velvets and silks, with their white accompaniments, finely set off the exceeding fairness of her neck and shoulders, which, though unwhitened artificially, were without a speck or blemish of the least degree. The gentle, thoughtful creature she had looked from a distance she now proved herself to be; she held also sound rather than current opinions on the plastic arts, and was the first intellectual woman he had seen there that night, except ^{the poetess} one of two as aforesaid.

They soon became well acquainted, and at a pause in their conversation noticed the new excitement caused by the arrival of some late-

comers with more news. The latter had been brought by a rippling, bright-eyed lady in black, who made the men listen to her, whether they would or no.

"I am glad I am an outsider," said Jocelyn's acquaintance, now seated on a sofa beside which he was standing. "I wouldn't be like my cousin over there for the world. She thinks her husband will be turned out at the next election, and she's quite wild."

"Yes; it is mostly the women who are the gamblers; the men only the cards. The pity is that politics are looked on as being a game for politicians, just as cricket is a game for cricketers; not as the serious duties of political trustees."

"How few of us ever think or feel that 'the nation of every country dwells in the cottage,' as somebody says!"

"Yes; though I wonder to hear you quote that."

"Oh—I am of no party, though my relations are. There can be only one best course at all times, and the wisdom of the nation should be directed to finding it, instead of zigzagging in two courses, according to the will of the party which happens to have the upper hand."

Having started thus, they found no difficulty in agreeing on many points. When Pierston went down-stairs from that assembly at a quarter to one, and passed under the steaming nostrils of an ambassador's horses to a hansom which waited for him against the railing of the square, he had an impression that the Beloved had re-emerged from the shadows, without any hint or initiative from him—to whom, indeed, such re-emergence was an unquestionably awkward thing.

In this he was aware, however, that though it might be now, as heretofore, the Loved who danced before him, it was the goddess behind her who pulled the string of that Jumping Jill.

He had lately been trying his artist hand again on the Dea's form in every conceivable phase and mood. He had become a one-part man—a presenter of her only. But his efforts had resulted in failures. In her implacable vanity she might be punishing him anew for presenting her so deplorably.

Chap. II. I L N.
II

SHE DRAWS CLOSE AND SATISFIES

HE could not forget Mrs. Pine-Avon's eyes, though he remembered nothing of her ^{her} other ^{general} facial details. They were round, inquiring, luminous. How that chestnut hair of hers had shone? It required no tiara to set it off, like that of the dowager he had seen there, who had put ten thousand pounds upon her head to make herself look worse than she would have appeared with the ninepenny muslin cap of a servant-woman.

Now the question was, ought he to see her again? He had his doubts. But, unfortunately for discretion, just when he was coming out of the rooms he had encountered an old lady of seventy, his friend Mrs. Brightwalton—the Honorable Mrs. Brightwalton—and she had hastily asked him to dinner for the day after the morrow, stating in the honest way he knew so well that she had heard

he was out of town or she would have asked him two or three weeks ago. Now, of all social things that Pierston liked it was to be asked to dinner offhand, as a stop-gap in place of some bishop, lord, or ^{duke} under Secretary, who couldn't come; and when the invitation was supplemented by the tidings that the lady who had so impressed him was to be one of the guests, he had promised instantly.

At the dinner he took ^{down} Mrs. Pine-Avon upon his arm, and talked to nobody else during the meal. Afterwards they kept apart awhile in the drawing-room for form's sake, but eventually gravitated together again, and finished the evening in each other's company. When, shortly after eleven, he came away, he felt almost certain that within those luminous gray eyes ^{the One} of his eternal fidelity had verily taken lodgings — and for a long lease. But this was not all. At parting he had, almost involuntarily, given her hand a pressure of a peculiar and indescribable kind; a little response from her, like a mere pulsation of the same sort, told him that the impression she had made upon him was reciprocated. She was, in a word, willing to go on.

But was he able?

There had not been much harm in the flir-
^{ment U.N.}
¹⁰

12merk 18.

and that of his wife, and of the separation a dozen years ago, and his ignorance of whether ^{she} were dead or alive?

to mean what he said would mean but could not; how useless he was likely to be for practical steps towards householding, though he was all the while pining for domestic life? He was now ^{a man} over forty, she was probably thirty; and he dared not make ^{meaningless} love with the careless ^{real} selfishness of a younger man. It ^{impossible}

12merk 19

Yet, for himself, he had a strong conviction that Marcia had ceased to be.

Hamptonshire Square, and he went hither with expectations of having a highly emotional time, at least. But somehow the very bell-pull seemed cold, although she had so earnestly asked him to come.

As the house spoke, so spoke the occupant,

much to the astonishment of the sculptor. The doors he passed through seemed as if they had not been opened for a month; and, entering the large drawing-room, he beheld, in an easy-chair in the far distance, a lady whom he journeyed across the carpet to reach, and ultimately did reach. To be sure, it was Mrs. Nicholas Pine-Avon, but frosted over indescribably. Raising her eyes in a slightly inquiring manner from the book she was reading, she leaned back in the chair, as if soaking herself in luxurious sensations which had nothing to do with him, and replied to his greeting with a few commonplace words.

The unfortunate Jocelyn, though recuperative to a degree, was at first terribly upset by this reception. He had distinctly begun to

love Nicholas, and he felt sick and almost ~~regretful~~ But happily his affection was incipient as yet, and a sudden sense of the ridiculous in his own position carried him to the verge of risibility during the scene. She signified a chair, and began the critical study of some rings she wore.

They talked over the day's news, and then an organ began to grind outside. The tune was a rollicking air he had heard at some

music-hall; and, by way of a diversion, he asked her if she knew the composition.

"No, I don't," she replied.

"Now, I'll tell you all about it," said he, gravely. "It is based on a sound old melody called 'The Jilt's Hornpipe.' Just as they turn Madeira into port in the space of a single night, so this old air has been taken and doctored, and twisted about, and brought out as a new popular ditty."

"Indeed!"

"If you are in the habit of going much to the music-halls or the burlesque theatres—"

"Yes?"

"You would find this is often done, with excellent effect."

She thawed a little, and then they went on to talk about her house, which had been newly painted, and decorated with greenish-blue satin up to the height of a person's head—an arrangement that somewhat improved her slightly faded, though still pretty, face, and was helped by the awnings over the windows.

Insert 20
"You have only had it two years if you deduct the three years you let it to some friends of mine, whom I have often called on in this very room, my darling", he said to himself - but not to her.

"Oh, never!"

However, before he rose she grew friendly to some degree, and when he left, just after the arrival of three opportune young ladies, she seemed regretful. She asked him to come again; and he thought he would tell the truth. "No; I shall not care to come again," he answered, in a tone inaudible to the young ladies.

She followed him to the door. "What an uncivil thing to say!" she murmured, in surprise.

"It is rather uncivil. Good-bye," said Pierston.

As a punishment she did not ring the bell, but left him to find his way out as he could. "Now What the devil this means I cannot tell," he said to himself, reflecting stock-still for a moment on the stairs. And yet the meaning was staring him in the face.

Meanwhile one of the three young ladies had said, "What interesting man was that, with his lovely head of hair? I saw him at Lady Channelcliffe's the other night."

"Jocelyn Pierston."

"Oh, Nichola, that is too bad! To let him go in that shabby way, when I would have

given anything to know him! I have wanted to know him ever since I found out how much his experiences had dictated his statuary, and I discovered them by seeing in a ^{death} Jersey paper ^{in Amber's case} notice of the marriage of a person supposed to be his wife, who ^{left} ran off with him many years ago, don't you know, ^{and had been living with some body under another name} and then wouldn't marry ^{according to} him, in obedience to some novel social principles she had invented for herself."

"Oh! didn't he ^{is she dead?} marry her?" said Mrs. Pine-Avon, with a start. "Why I heard only yesterday that he ^{it was probable she was alive:} did, though they have lived apart ever since."

^{It is probable she was alive:} "Quite a mistake," said the young lady.

"How I wish I could run after him!"

But Jocelyn was receding from the pretty widow's house with long strides. He went out very little during the next few days, but about a week later he kept an engagement to dine with Lady Iris Speedwell, whom he never neglected, because she was the brightest hostess in London.

By some accident he arrived rather early. Lady Iris had left the drawing-room for a moment to see that all was right in the dining-room, and when he was shown in, there stood alone in the lamplight Nichola Pine-Avon.

She had been the first arrival. He had not in the least expected to meet her there, further than that, in a general sense, at Lady Iris's you expected to meet everybody.

She had just come out of the cloak-room, and was so tender and even apologetic that he had not the heart to be other than friendly. As the other guests dropped in, the pair retreated into a shady corner, and she talked beside him till all moved off for the eating and drinking.

He had not been appointed to take her across to the dining-room, but at the table found her exactly opposite. She looked very charming between the candles, and then suddenly it dawned upon him that her previous manner must have originated, in some false report about Marcia, of whose existence he had not heard for years. Anyhow, he was not disposed to resent an inexplicability in womankind, having found that it usually arose independently of fact, reason, probability, or his own deserts.

So he dined on, catching her eyes and the few pretty words she made opportunity to project across the table to him now and then. He was courteously responsive only, but Mrs.

Pine-Avon herself distinctly made advances. He readmired her, while at the same time her conduct in her own house had been enough to check his confidence—enough even to make him doubt if the Well-Beloved really resided within those contours, or had ever been more than the most transitory passenger through that interesting and accomplished soul.

He was pondering this question, yet growing decidedly moved by the playful pathos of her attitude, when, by chance searching his pocket for his handkerchief, something crackled, and he felt there an unopened letter, which had arrived at the moment he was leaving his house and he had slipped into his coat to read

---of whose death he had
been credibly, though not absolutely,
assured a couple of years before
this time.

he began to conjecture on the possible sender.

The lady on his right, whom he had brought in, was a leading actress of the town—indeed, of the United Kingdom and America, for that matter—a creature in airy clothing, translucent, like a balsam or sea-anemone, without shadows, and in movement as responsive as some highly lubricated, many-wired machine

which, if one presses a particular spring, flies open and reveals its works. The spring in the present case was the artistic commendation she deserved. At this particular moment she was engaged with the man on her right, a representative of Family, who talked positively and hollowly, as if shouting down a vista of five hundred years from the Rudal past. The lady on Jocelyn's left, wife of a Lord Justice of Appeal, was in like manner talking to her companion on the outer side; so that for the time he was left to himself. He took advantage of the opportunity, drew out his letter, and read it as it lay upon his napkin, nobody observing him, so far as he was aware.

It came from the wife of one of his father's former workmen, and was concerning her son, whom she begged Jocelyn to recommend as candidate for some post in town that she wished him to fill. But the end of the letter was what arrested him:

"You will be sorry to hear, Si, that dear little Avice Caro, as we used to call her in her maiden days, is dead. She married her cousin, if you do mind, and went away from here for a good few years, but was left a widow, and came back a twelvemonth ago; since when she faltered and faltered, and now she is gone."

III = Chap VII 12N.

SHE BECOMES AN INACCESSIBLE GHOST

By imperceptible and slow degrees the scene at the dinner table ^{seemed to recede} receded into the background, behind the ^{more distinct} vivid presentment of Avice Caro and the old, old scenes on Isle Vindilia which were inseparable from her personality. The dining-room was real no more, dissolving under the bold, stony promontory and the incoming West Sea. The handsome Marchioness in geranium-red and diamonds, who was visible to him on his host's right hand opposite, became one of the ^{misty} glowing vermillion sunsets that he had watched so many times over ^{the water} Deadman's Bay, with the form of Avice in the foreground. Between his eyes and the judge who sat next to Nichola, with a chin so raw that he must have shaved every quarter of an hour during the day, intruded the face of Avice as she had glanced at him in their last parting. The crannied features of the old so-

the stone is bad

ciety lady, who, if she had been a few years older, would have been as old-fashioned as her daughter, ^{and the flowers made} ~~shaped themselves to the~~ ^{and the flowers made} dusty quarries of his and Avice's parents, down which he had clambered with Avice hundreds of times. The ivy trailing about the tablecloth, the lights in the tall ^{and the flowers made} candlesticks, and the bunches of flowers ^{and the flowers made} were transmuted into the ivies of the cliff-built castle, the tufts of seaweed, and the lighthouses on the isle. ^{the light the} ~~The~~ salt airs of the ocean killed the smell of the viands, and instead of the clatter of voices came the monologue of the tide off the Beal.

More than all, Nichola Pine-Avon lost the blooming radiance which she had latterly acquired; she became a woman of his acquaintance with no distinctive traits; she seemed to grow material, a superficies of flesh and bone merely, a person of lines and surfaces; she was a language in living ^{of} ~~of~~pher no more.

When the ladies had withdrawn it was just the same. The soul of Avice — the only woman he had ~~never~~ loved of those who had loved him — surrounded him like a firmament. Art drew near to him in the person of one of the most distinguished of portrait-painters; but there was only one painter for Jocelyn — his own

memory. All that was eminent in European surgery addressed him in the person of that harmless and unassuming foggy whose hands had been inside the bodies of hundreds of living men; but the lily-white corpse of an obscure country-girl chilled the interest of discourse with such a king of operators.

Reaching the drawing-room, he talked to his hostess. Though she had entertained twenty guests at her table that night she had known not only what every one of them was saying and doing throughout the repast, but what every one was thinking. So, being an old friend, she said, quietly, "What has been troubling you? Something has, I know. I have been travelling over your face and have seen it there."

Nothing could less express the meaning his recent ^{in formation} news had for him than a statement of its facts. He told of the opening of the letter, and the discovery of the death of an old acquaintance.

"The only woman whom I never ^{loved} valued, I may almost say," he added, ^{and therefore} "and therefore the only one I shall ever regret."

Whether she considered it a sufficient explanation or not, the woman of experiences

accepted it as such. She was the single lady of his circle whom nothing erratic in his doings could surprise, and he often gave her stray ends of his confidence thus with perfect safety.

He did not go near Mrs. Pine-Avon again; he could not; and on leaving the house walked abstractedly along the streets till he found himself at his own door. In his own room he sat down, and, placing his hands behind his head, thought his thoughts anew.

At one side of the room stood an escritoire, and from a lower drawer ^{of the same} therein he took out a small box tightly nailed down. He forced the cover with the poker. The box contained a ^{multi-formous} variety of odds and ends, which Pierston had thrown into it from time to time in ^{past} years, for future sorting—an intention that he had never carried out. From the melancholy mass of papers—faded photographs, seals, diaries, withered flowers, and such like—Jocelyn drew a little portrait, one taken on glass in the primitive days of photography, and framed with tinsel in the commonest way.

It was Avice Caro, as she had appeared during the summer month or two which he had spent with her on the island twenty years

before ^{that} this time, her young lips pursed up, her hands meekly folded. The effect of the glass was to lend to the picture much of the softness characteristic of the original. He remembered when it was taken—during one afternoon they had spent together at ^{the} neighboring watering-place, when he had suggested her sitting to a touring artist on the sands, there being nothing else for them to do. A long contemplation of the likeness completed in his emotions what the letter had begun.

Insert 22 LN
He had unceremoniously forsaken her on the eve of what would have become an irrevocable engagement, because he did not love her, and it had been, in one view, the kindest thing he could have done, though the harshest, no spark of passion existing.

tered by regret beyond words.

That kiss which had offended his dignity, which she had so childishly given him before her consciousness of womanhood had been awakened, what he would have offered to have a quarter of it now!

Pierston was almost angry with himself for

his feelings of this night, so unreasonably, motivelessly strong were they towards the lost young playmate. "How senseless of me!" he said, as he lay in his lonely bed. She had been another man's wife almost the whole time since he was estranged from her; and now she was a corpse. Yet the absurdity did not make his grief the less; and the consciousness of the intrinsic, almost radiant, purity of this new-sprung affection for a flown spirit forbade him to check it. The flesh was absent altogether; it was love rarefied and refined to its highest attar. He had felt nothing like it before.

The next afternoon he went down to the club; not his large club, where the men hardly spoke to each other, but the ^{smaller} homely one, where they told stories of an afternoon, and were not ashamed to confess among themselves to ^{the most extraordinary} personal weaknesses and follies, knowing well that such secrets would go no farther. But he could not tell this, so volatile and intangible was the story that to convey it in words would have been as hard as to cage a perfume.

They observed his altered manner and said he was in love. Pierston admitted that he

was; and there it ended. When he reached home he looked out of his bedroom window, and began to consider in what direction from where he stood that darling little figure lay. It was straight across there, under the young pale moon. The symbol signified well. The divinity of the silver bow was not more excellently pure than she, the lost, had been. Under that moon was ^{the} island of ^{the} Ancient Slingers, and on the island a house, framed from mullions to ^{ridge-top} chimney-top like the isle itself, of stone. Inside the window, the moonlight irradiating her winding-sheet, lay Avice, reached only by the faint noises inherent in the isle; the tink-tink of the chisels in the quarries, the ^{the} surging of the tides in the bay, and the muffled grumbling of the ^{the} currents in the never-pacified ^{the} sea.

He began to divine the truth. Avice, the departed one, though she had come short of inspiring a passion, had yet possessed a ground-quality absent from her rivals, without which it seemed that a fixed and full-rounded constancy to a woman could not flourish in him. Like his own, her family had been islanders for centuries—from Norman, Anglian, Roman-Balearic-British times. Hence, in her nature,

as in his, was some mysterious ingredient sucked from the isle; otherwise a racial instinct necessary to the absolute unison of a pair. Thus, though he might never love a woman of the island race, for lack in her of the desired refinement, he could not love long a kimberlin—a woman other than of the island race, for her lack of this groundwork of character.

Such was Pierston's view of things. Another fancy of his, an artist's superstition merely, may be mentioned. The Caros, like some other local families, suggested a Roman lineage, more or less grafted on the stock of the Slingers. Their features recalled those of the Italian peasantry to any one as familiar as he was with them; and there were evidences that the Roman colonists had been populous and long-abiding in and near this corner of Britain. Tradition urged that a temple to Venus once stood at the top of the Roman road leading up into the isle; and possibly one to the love-goddess of the Slingers antedated this. What so natural as that the true star of his soul would be found nowhere but in one of the old island breed?

After dinner his old friend Somers came in to smoke, and when they had talked a little

while Somers alluded casually to some place at which they would meet on the morrow.

"I sha'n't be there," said Pierston.

"But you promised!"

"Yes. But I shall be at the island—looking at a dead woman's grave." As he spoke his eyes turned and remained fixed on a table near. Somers followed the direction of his glance to a photograph on a stand.

"Is that she?" he asked.

"Yes."

"Rather a bygone affair, then."

Pierston acknowledged it. "She's the only sweetheart I ever ~~loved~~ ^{loved} slighted, Alfred," he said. "Because she's the only one I ought to have cared for. That's just the fool I have always been."

"But if she's dead and buried you can go to her grave at any time as well as now to keep up the sentiment."

"I don't know that she's buried."

"But to-morrow—the Academy night! Of all days, why go then?"

"I don't care about the Academy."

"Pierston—you are our only inspired sculptor. You are our Praxiteles, or rather our Lysippus. You are almost the only man of

this generation who has been able to mould and chisel forms living enough to draw the idle public away from the popular ^{of the} paintings into the usually deserted lecture-room; and people who have seen your last piece of stuff say there has been nothing like them since sixteen hundred and—since the sculptors 'of the great race' lived and died, whenever that was. Well, then, for the sake of others you ought not to rush off to that God-forgotten sea-rock just when you are wanted in town, all for a woman you last saw a hundred years ago."

"No—it was only nineteen and three quarters," replied his friend, with abstracted literalness. He went the next morning.

Since the days of his youth a railway had been constructed along the pebble bank, so that, except when the rails were washed away by the tides, which was rather often, the peninsula was ^{directly} quickly accessible. At two o'clock in the afternoon he was rattled along by this new means of locomotion, under the familiar monotonous line of bran-colored stones, and he soon emerged from the station, standing as a strange exotic among the black lerrets, ^{and the} ruins of the washed-away village, and the white

cubes of
oolite

cubes of oolite, just come to view after burial through unreckonable geologic years.

In entering upon the pebble beach the train had passed close to the ruins of Henry the Eighth's or Sandsfoot Castle, whither Avice was to have accompanied him on the night of his departure. Had she appeared ~~the~~ primitive betrothal would probably have taken place; and, as no islander had ever been known to break that compact, she would have become his wife.

Ascending the steep incline to where the quarrymen were chipping, just as they had formerly done, and within sound of the great stone saws, he looked southward towards the Beal.

The level line of the sea horizon rose above the surface of the isle, a ruffled patch in mid-distance as usual marking the race, whence many a Lycidas had gone.

"Visiting the bottom of the monstrous world."

but had not been blessed with a poet as a friend. ^{and} Against the stretch of water, where a school of mackerel twinkled in the afternoon light, was defined, in addition to the distant lighthouse, a church with its tower, standing

about a quarter of a mile off, near the edge of the cliff. The church-yard gravestones could be seen in profile against the same vast spread of watery babble and unrest.

Among the graves moved the form of a man clothed in a white sheet, which the wind blew and flapped sadly every now and then. Near him moved six men bearing a long box, and two or three persons in black followed. The coffin, with its twelve legs, crawled across the isle while around and beneath it the flashing lights from the sea and the school of mackerel were reflected; a fishing-boat, far out in the Channel, being momentarily discernible under the coffin also.

The procession wandered round to a particular corner and halted, and paused there a long while in the wind, the sea behind them, the surplice of the priest still blowing. Jocelyn stood with his hat off: he was present, though he was a quarter of a mile off; and he seemed to hear the words that were being said, though nothing but the wind was audible.

He instinctively knew that it was none other than Avice whom he was seeing interred: his Avice, as he now began presumptuously to call

her. Presently the little group withdrew from before the sea-shine and disappeared.

He felt himself unable to go farther in that direction, and turning aside went aimlessly across the open land, visiting the various spots that he had formerly visited with her. But, as if tethered to the church-yard by a cord, he

17th Feb 23.
-- under whose belly the flashing lights from the sea and school of mackerel were reflected;

gate.

Not a soul was now within the precincts. The grave, newly shaped, was easily discoverable behind the church, and when the same young moon arose which he had observed the previous evening from his window in London he could see the yet fresh foot-marks of the mourners and bearers. The breeze had fallen to a calm with the setting of the sun: the lighthouse had opened its glaring eye, and, disinclined to leave a spot sublimed both by early association and present regret, he moved back to the church-wall, warm from the afternoon sun, and sat down upon a window-sill facing the grave.

Part. II. in 1 & 2. ^{begin}
IV Chap. XIII.

SHE THREATENS TO RESUME CORPOREAL SUBSTANCE

THE lispings of the sea beneath the cliffs were all the sounds that reached him, for the quarries were silent now. How long he sat here ^{leaning} ~~lonely~~ and thinking he did not know. Neither did he know, though he felt drowsy, whether inexpectant sadness—that gentle soporific—lulled him into a short sleep, so that he lost count of time and consciousness of incident. But ^{all a sudden} ~~during some minute or minutes~~ he seemed to see Avice Caro herself, ^{realized} ~~bending over~~ and then withdrawing from her grave in the light of the moon.

She seemed not a year older, not a digit less slender, not a line more angular, than when he had parted from her twenty years earlier, in the lane hard by. ^{dim} A ^{renascent} reasoning on the impossibility of such a phenomenon as this being more than a dream-fancy roused him with a start from his heaviness.

"I must have been asleep," he said.

Yet she had seemed so real. Pierston, how-

Insert 24.

The outline of the grave was as distinct as before he had dozed, but nobody stood there.

^{had looked} now look the same as she had appeared nineteen or twenty years ago. Were what he saw substantial flesh, it must have been some other person than Avice Caro.

Having satisfied his sentiment by coming to the graveside, there was nothing more for him to do in the island, and he decided to return to London that night. But, some time remaining still on his hands, Jocelyn, by a natural instinct, turned his feet in the direction of East Quarters, ^{Wales} the village of his birth and of hers. Passing the market-square, he pursued the arm of road to ^{all in the road} Sylvania Castle, a private mansion of comparatively modern date, in whose grounds stood the single plantation of trees of which the isle could boast. The cottages extended close to the walls of the enclosure, and one of the last of these dwellings had been Avice's, in which, as it was her freehold, she possibly had died.

To reach it he passed the gates of Sylvania and observed above the lawn-wall a board announcing that the house was to be let furnished. A few steps farther revealed the cottage which, with its quaint and massive stone features of two or three centuries' antiquity, was capable even now of longer resistance to the rasp of time than ordinary new erections. His attention was drawn to the window, ^{which was still} unblinded, though a lamp lit the room. He stepped back against the wall opposite and gazed in intently.

At a table covered with a white cloth a young woman stood putting tea-things away into a corner-cupboard. She was in all respects the Avicé he had lost, the girl he had seen in the church-yard and had fancied to be the illusion of a dream. And though there was this time no doubt about her reality, the isolation of her position in the silent house lent her a curiously startling aspect. Divining the explanation, he waited for footsteps, and in a few moments a quarryman passed him on his journey home. Pierston inquired of the man concerning the spectacle.

"Oh yes, ^{Sir} that's poor ^{Mr.} Caro's only daughter, and it must be lonely for her there

to-night, poor maid! Yes, good-now; she's the very daps of her mother—that's what everybody says."

"But how does she come to be so lonely?"

"One of her brothers went to sea and was drowned, and t'other is in America."

"They were quarry-owners at one time?"

The quarryman "pitched his ^{pitch}," and explained to the ^{subdued} stranger that there had been three families thereabouts in the stone trade, who had got much involved with each other in the last generation. They were the Bencombs, the Pierstons, and the Caros. The Bencombs strained their utmost to outlift the other two, and partially succeeded. They grew enormously rich, sold out, and ^{retired to} disappeared ^{London.} altogether from the island which had been their making. The Pierstons kept a dogged middle course, thrived without show or noise, and also retired in their turn. The Caros were pulled completely down in the competition with the other two, and when Widow Caro's daughter married her cousin Jim Caro, he tried to regain for the family its original place in the three-cornered struggle. He took contracts at less than he could profit by, speculated more and more, till at last the crash came ^{and} he was sold

up, went away, and later on came back to live in this little cottage, which was his wife's by inheritance. There he remained till his death; and now his widow was gone. Hardships had helped on her end.

The quarryman proceeded on his way, and Pierston, deeply remorseful, knocked at the door of the minute freehold. The girl herself opened it, lamp in hand.

"Avice!" he said, tenderly; "Avice Caro!" even now unable to get over the strange feeling that he was ^{Forty} twenty years younger, addressing Avice the forsaken.

"^{Yes} Ann, sir," said she.

"Ah, your name is not the same as your mother's!" ^{Yes, Both my name.}
 "My ^{second} name is. And my surname, Poor mother married her cousin."

"As everybody does here. . . . Well, Ann or otherwise, you are Avice to me, And you have lost her now?"

"I have, Sir."

She spoke in the very same sweet voice that he had listened to a score of years before, and bent eyes of the same familiar hazel inquiringly upon him.

"I knew your mother at one time," he said:

"and, learning of her death and burial, I took the liberty of calling upon you. You will forgive a stranger doing that?"

"Yes," she said, dispassionately; and, glancing round the room: "This was mother's own house, and now it is mine. I am sorry not to be in mourning on the night of her funeral, but I have just been to put some flowers on her grave, and I took it off afore going, that the damp mid not spoil the crape. You see, she was bad a long time, and I have to be careful, and do washing and ironing for a living. She hurt her side with wringing up the large sheets she had to wash for the Castle folks here."

"I hope you won't hurt yourself doing it, my dear."

"Oh no, that I sha'n't! There's Charl Wool-lat, and Sammy ^{Wool} Scribber, and Ted Gibsey, and lots o' young chaps; they'll wring anything for me if they happen to come along. But I can hardly trust 'em. Sam ^{Wool} Scribber t'other day twisted a linen table-cloth into two pieces, for all the world as if it had been a pipe-light. They never know when to stop in their wringing."

The voice truly was his Avice's; but

Avice the Second was clearly more matter-of-fact, unreflecting, less cultivated than her mother had been. This Avice would never recite poetry from any platform, local or other, with enthusiastic appreciation of its fire. There was a ^{little} disappointment in his recognition of this; yet she touched him as few had done; he could not bear to go away. "How old are you?" he asked.

"Going in nineteen."

It was about the age of her double, Avice the First, when he and she had strolled together over the cliffs during the engagement. But he was now forty, if a day. She before him was an uneducated laundress, and he was a sculptor and a Royal Academician, with a fortune and a reputation. Yet why was it an unpleasant sensation to him just then to recollect that he was two-score?

He could find no further excuse for remaining, and, having still half an hour to spare, he went round by the road to the other or west side of the last-century ^{modern} Sylvania Castle, and came to the ^{last} farthest house out there on the cliff. It was his early home. Used in the summer as a lodging-house for visitors, it now stood empty and silent, the evening wind

swaying the euonymus and tamarisk boughs in the front—the only evergreen shrubs that could weather the whipping salt ^{sea} gales which ^{reached} sped past the walls. Opposite the house, far out at sea, the familiar light-ship winked from the sand bank, and all at once there came to him a wild wish—that, instead of having an artist's reputation, he could be living here an illiterate and unknown man, wooing, and in a fair way of winning, the pretty laundress in the cottage hard by.

Chap. IV

v

THE RESUMPTION TAKES PLACE

HAVING returned to London, he mechanically resumed his customary life; but he was not really living there. The phantom of Avice, now grown to be warm flesh and blood, held his mind afar. He thought of nothing but the isle, and Avice the Second dwelling therein — inhaling its salt breath, stroked by its singing rains and by the haunted atmosphere of Roman Venus about and around the site of her perished temple there. The very defects in the country girl became charms as viewed from town.

Nothing now pleased him so much as to spend that portion of the afternoon which he devoted to outdoor exercise in haunting the purlieus of the wharves along the Thames, where the stone of his native rock was unshipped from the coasting-craft that had brought it thither. He would pass inside

the great gates of these landing-places on the right or left bank, ^{and} contemplate the white cubes and oblongs, imbibe their associations, call up the genius loci whence they came, and almost forget that he was in London.

One afternoon he was walking away from the mud-splashed entrance to one of the wharves, when his attention was drawn to a female form on the opposite side of the way, going towards the spot he had just left. She was somewhat small, slight, and graceful; her attire alone would have been enough to attract him, being simple and countrified to picturesqueness, but he was more than attracted by her strong resemblance to Avice Caro, the younger — Ann Avice, as she had said she was called.

Before she had receded a hundred yards he felt certain that it was Avice, indeed; and his ^{fantasy} unifying mood of the afternoon was now so intense that the lost and the found Avice seemed essentially the same person. Their external likeness to each other — probably owing to the cousinship between the elder and her husband — went far to nourish the fantasy. He hastily turned, and rediscovered the girl among the pedestrians. She kept on

her way to the wharf, where, looking inquiringly around her for a few seconds, with the manner of one unaccustomed to the locality, she opened the gate and disappeared.

Pierston also went up to the gate and entered. She had crossed to the landing-place, beyond which a lumpy craft lay moored. Drawing nearer, he discovered her to be engaged in conversation with the skipper and an elderly woman—both come straight from the oolitic isle, as was apparent in a moment from their accent. Pierston felt no hesitation in making himself known as a native, the ruptured engagement between Avice's mother and himself twenty years before having been known to few or none now living.

The present embodiment of Avice recognized him, and with the artless candor of her race and years explained the situation, though that was rather his duty as an intruder than hers.

"This is Cap'n Kibbs, sir, a distant relation of ^{my} father's," she said. "And this is Mrs. Kibbs. We've come up from the island w'en just for a trip, and are going to sail back w'en Wednesday."

"Oh, I see. And where are you staying?"

"Here—on board."

"What—~~do~~ you live on board entirely?"

"Yes."

"Lord, sir," broke in Mrs. Kibbs, "I should be afeard o' my life to tine my eyes among these here kimberlins at night-time; and even by day, if so be I vehture into the streets, I nowhen forget how many turnings to the right and to the left 'tis to get back to ^{the} ~~the~~ vessel—do I, ^{job?} ~~job?~~"

The skipper nodded confirmation.

"You are safer ashore than afloat," said Pierston, "especially in the Channel, with these winds and those heavy blocks of stone."

"Well," said Cap'n Kibbs, after privately clearing something from his mouth, "as to the winds, there idden much danger in them at this time o' year. 'Tis the ocean-bound steamers that make the risk to craft like ours. If you happen to be in their course, under you go—cut clane in ^{two} ~~two~~ pieces, and they never lying to to ^{haide up} ~~haul in~~ your carcasses, and nobody to tell the tale."

Pierston turned to Avice, wanting to say much to her, yet not knowing what to say. He lamely remarked at last, "You go back the same way, Avice?"

"Yes, Sir."

"Well, take care of yourself afloat."

"Oh yes."

"I hope—I may see you again soon—and talk to you."

"I hope so, Sir."

He could not get further, and after a while Pierston left them, and went away thinking of Avice more than ever.

The next day he mentally timed them down the river, allowing for the pause to take in ballast, and on the Wednesday pictured the sail down the open sea. That night he thought of the little craft under the bows of the huge steam-vessels, powerless to make itself seen or heard, and Avice, now growing inexpressibly dear, sleeping in her little berth at the mercy of a thousand chance catastrophes.

Honest perception had told him that this Avice, fairer than her mother in face and form, was her inferior in soul and understanding. Yet the fervor which the first could never kindle in him was, almost to his alarm, burning up now. He began to have misgivings as to some queer trick that his migratory ^{well} Beloved was about to play him, or rather the capricious divinity behind that ideal lady.

^{play} A gigantic satire upon the mutations of his nymph during the past twenty years seemed looming in the distance. A forsaking of the accomplished and well-connected Mrs. Pine-Avon for the little laundress, under the traction of some mystic magnet which had nothing to do with reason—surely that was the form of the satire.

But it was recklessly pleasant to leave the suspicion unrecognized as yet and follow the lead.

In thinking how best to do this Pierston recollected that, as was customary when the summer-time approached, ^{Well - to the Rock} Sylvania Castle had been advertised for letting furnished. A solitary dreamer like himself, whose wants all lay in an artistic and ideal direction, did not require such gaunt accommodation as the aforesaid residence offered; but the spot was all, and the expenses of a few months of tenancy therein he could well afford. A letter to the agent was despatched that night, and in a few days Jocelyn found himself the temporary possessor of a place which he had never seen the inside of since his childhood, and had then deemed the abode of unpleasant ghosts.

THE PAST SHINES IN THE PRESENT

It was the evening of Pierston's arrival at Sylvania Castle, an ordinary manor-house on the brink of the cliffs; and he had walked through the rooms, about the lawn, and into the surrounding plantation of elms, which on this island of treeless rock lent a unique character to the enclosure. In name, nature, and accessories the property within the girdling wall formed a complete antithesis to everything in its precincts. To find other trees between Pebblebank and Beal it was necessary to recede a little in time—to dig down to a loose stratum of the underlying stone-beds, where a forest of conifers lay as petrifications, their heads all in one direction, as blown down by a gale in the Secondary geologic epoch.

Dusk had closed in, and he now proceeded with what was, after all, the real business of his sojourn. The two servants who had been

left to take care of the house were in their own quarters, and he went out unobserved. Crossing a hollow overhung by the budding boughs, he approached an empty garden-house of Elizabethan design, which stood on the outer wall of the grounds, and commanded by a window the fronts of the nearest cottages. Among them was the home of the resuscitated Avice.

He had chosen this moment for his outlook through knowing that the villagers were in no hurry to pull down their blinds at nightfall. And, as he had divined, the inside of the young woman's living-room was visible to him as formerly, illuminated by the rays of its own lamp.

A subdued thumping came every now and then from the apartment. She was ironing linen on a flannel table-cloth, a row of such apparel hanging on a clothes-horse by the fire. Her face had been pale when he encountered her, but now it was warm and pink with her exertions and the heat of the stove. Yet it was in perfect and passionless repose, which imparted a Minerva cast to the profile. When she glanced up, her lineaments seemed to have all the soul and heart that had characterized

her mother's, and had been with her a true index of the spirit within. Could it be possible that in this case the manifestation was fictitious? He had met with many such examples of hereditary persistence without the qualities signified by the traits. He unconsciously hoped that it was at least not entirely so here.

The room was less furnished than when he had last beheld it. The "bo-fet," or double corner cupboard, where the china was formerly kept, had disappeared, its place being taken by a plain board. The tall old clock, with its ancient oak ^{case} arched brow, and humorous mouth, was also not to be seen, a cheap white-dialled specimen doing its work. What these displacements might betoken saddened his humanity less than it cheered his primitive instinct in pointing out how her necessities might bring them together.

Having fixed his ^{self} residence near her for some lengthy time, he felt in no hurry to obtrude his presence just now, and went indoors. That this girl's frame was doomed to be a real embodiment of that olden seductive one—that Protean dream-creature, who had never seen fit to irradiate the mother's image till it be-

came a mere memory after dissolution—he doubted less every moment.

There was an ^{self} uneasiness in recognizing ^{this} such. There was something abnormal in his present proclivity. A certain sanity had, after all, accompanied his former idealizing passions; the Beloved had seldom informed a personality which, while enrapturing his soul, simultaneously shocked his intellect. A change, perhaps, had come.

It was a fine morning on the morrow. Walking in the grounds towards the gate, he saw Avice entering ^{to the house} his hired castle with a broad oval wicker-basket covered with a white cloth, which ^{and} burden she bore, round to the back door. Of course, she washed for his own household; he had not thought of that. In the morning sunlight she appeared rather as a sylph than as a washerwoman; and he could not but think that the slightness of her figure was as ill adapted to this occupation as her mother's had been.

But, after all, it was not the washerwoman that he saw now. In front of her, on the surface of her, was shining out that more real, more interpenetrating being whom he knew so well! The occupation of the subserving

^{no man} minion, the blemishes of the temporary creature who formed the background, were of the ^{more} same account in the presentation of the indispensable one as ^{the} supporting posts and framework in a pyrotechnic display.

While
support

She left the house and went homeward by a path of which he was not aware, having probably changed her ^{route} course because she had seen him standing there. It meant nothing, for she had hardly become acquainted with him; yet that she should have avoided him was a new experience. He ^{found} had no opportunity for a further study of her by distant observation, and hit upon a pretext for bringing her face to face with him. He found fault with his linen, and directed that the laundress should be sent for.

"She is rather young, poor little thing," said the housemaid, apologetically. "But since her mother's death she has enough to do to keep above water, and we make shift with her. But I'll tell her, Sir."

"I will see her myself. Send her in when she comes," said Pierston.

One morning, accordingly, when he was answering a spiteful criticism of a late work of his, he was told that she waited his pleasure in the hall. He went out.

"About the washing," said the sculptor, stiffly. "I am a very particular person, and I wish no preparation of lime to be used."

"I didn't know folks used it," replied the maiden, in a ^{stare} scared and reserved tone, without looking at him.

"That's all right. And then, the mangling smashes the buttons."

"I haven't got a mangle, Sir," she murmured.

"Ah, that's satisfactory. And I object to so much borax in the starch."

"I ^{didn't} don't put any," (Avice returned in the same close way;) "never heard the name o't afore!" ()

"Oh, I see!"

All this time Pierston was thinking of the girl—or, as the ^{scientific} might say, Nature was working her plans for the next ^{producing} generation under the cloak of a dialogue on linen. He could not read her individual character, owing to the confusing effect of her likeness to a woman whom he had valued too late. He could not help seeing in her all that he knew of another, and veiling in her all that did not harmonize with his sense of metempsychosis.

The girl seemed to think of nothing but the business in hand. She ^{had} answered to the

point, and was ^{not} hardly aware of his sex or of his shape.

"I knew your mother, Avice," he said. "You remember my telling you so?"

"Yes."

"Well—I have taken this house for two or three months, and you will be very useful to me. You still live just outside the wall?"

"Yes, ^S sir," said the self-contained girl.

Demurely and dispassionately she turned to leave—this pretty creature with features so still. There was something strange in seeing ^(move off thus) that form which he knew passing well, she who was ^{once} so throbbingly alive to his presence that, not many yards from this spot, she had flung her arms ^{tenderly} round him and given him a kiss which, despised in its freshness, had revived in him latterly as the dearest kiss of all his life. And now this "daps" of her mother (as they called her in the dialect here), this perfect copy, why did she turn away?

"Your mother was a refined and well-informed woman, I think I remember?"

"She was ^{Sir}; everybody said so."

"I hope you resemble her."

She archly shook her head and drew warily away.

"Oh! one thing more, Avice. I have not brought much linen, so you must come to the house every day."

"Very good, ^{Sr.}"

"You won't forget that?"

"Oh no."

Then he let her go. He was a town man, and she an artless islander, yet he had opened himself out like a sea-anemone without disturbing the epiderm of her nature. It was monstrous that a maiden who had ^{literally} assumed the personality of ^{the woman he loved with such tender} her of his tenderest memory should be so impervious. Perhaps it was he who was wanting. Avice might be ^{the} Passion ^{Venus} masking as Indifference, because he was so many years older in outward show.

This brought him to the root of it. In his heart he was not a day older than when he had wooed the mother at the daughter's present age. His record moved on with the years, his sentiments stood still.

When he beheld ^{the class - subjects} those of his fellows who were defined as buffers and fogies—imperturbable, matter-of-fact, slightly ridiculous beings, past-masters in the art of populat-

ing homes, schools, and colleges, and present adepts in the science of giving away brides—how he envied them, assuming them to feel as they appeared to feel, with their commerce and their politics, their glasses and their pipes! They had got past the distracting currents of passionateness, and were in the calm waters of middle-aged philosophy. But he, their contemporary, ^{almost} was tossed like a cork hither and thither upon the crest of every fancy, precisely as he had been tossed when he was half his present age, with the ^{added condition} burden now of double pain to himself in his growing vision of all as vanity.

Avice had gone, and he saw her no more that day. Since he could not again call upon her, she was as inaccessible as if she had entered the military citadel on the hilltop beyond them.

In the evening he went out and paced down the lane to the Red King's castle overhanging the cliff, beside whose age the castle he occupied was but a thing of yesterday. Below the castle precipice lay enormous blocks, which had fallen from it, and several of them were carved over with names and initials. He knew the spot and the old trick well, and by searching

in the faint moon-rays he found a pair of names which, as a ^{boy}, ^{ambitious} he himself had cut. They were "AVICE" and "JOCELYN"—Avice Caro's and his own. The letters were now nearly worn away by the weather and the brine. But close by, in quite fresh letters, stood "ANN ^{another} AVICE," coupled with the name "ISAAC." ^{George} They could not have been there more than two or three years, and the "Ann Avice" was probably Avice the Second. Who was Isaac? ^{George} Some boy admirer of her child-time, doubtless.

He retraced his steps, and passed the Caros' house towards his own. The revived Avice animated the dwelling, and the light within the room fell upon the window. She was just inside that blind.

Whenever she unexpectedly came to the castle he started, ^{and his trembles} and lost placidity. It was not at her presence as such, but at the new condition, which seemed to have something sinister in it. On the other hand, the most abrupt encounter with him moved her to no emotion as it had moved her prototype in the old days. She was indifferent to, almost unconscious of, his propinquity. He was no more

than a statue to her; she was a growing fire to him.

A sudden Sapphic terror of love would ever and anon come upon the sculptor when his matured ^{reasoning} reflecting powers would insist upon informing him of the fearful lapse from ^{dignity} reasonableness that lay in this infatuation. It threw him into a sweat. What if now, at last, he were doomed to do penance for his past emotional wanderings (in a material sense) by being chained in fatal fidelity to an object that his intellect despised? ^{Insert 25.} One night he dreamed that

*I need
I.L.N.*

Sometimes he thought he saw, dimly visioned in that young face "the white, implacable Aphrodite".

at the change of front in himself. She had worn the guise of strange women; she had been a woman of every class, from the dignified daughter of some ecclesiastic or peer to a Nubian almeh with her handkerchief undulating to the beat of the tom-tom; but all these embodiments had been endowed with a certain smartness, either of the flesh or spirit: some with wit, a few with talent, and even genius. But the new impersonation had ap-

parently nothing beyond sex and prettiness. She knew not how to sport a fan or handkerchief, hardly how to pull on a glove.

But her limited life was innocent, and that went far. Poor little Avicé! her mother's image: there it all lay. After all, her parentage was as good as his own; it was misfortune that had sent her down to this. Odd as it seemed to him, her limitations were largely what he loved her for. Her rejuvenating power over him had ineffable charm. He felt as he had felt when standing beside her predecessor; but, alas! he was twenty years farther onward into the shade.

A FEW mornings later he was looking through an upper back window over a screened part of the garden. The door beneath him opened, and a figure appeared tripping forth. She went round out of sight to where the gardener was at work, and presently returned with a bunch of green stuff fluttering in each hand. It was Avice, her dark hair now braided up snugly under a cap. She sailed on with a rapt and unconscious face, her thoughts a thousand removes from him.

How she had suddenly come to be an inmate of his own house he could not understand, till he recalled the fact that he had given the castle servants a whole holiday to attend a review of the yeomanry in the watering-place over the bay, on their stating that they could provide a temporary substitute to stay in the house. They had evidently called in Avice. To his

great pleasure he discovered their opinion of his requirements to be such a mean one that they had called in no one else.

The Spirit, as she seemed to him, brought his lunch into the room where he was writing, and he beheld her uncover it. She went to the window to adjust a blind which had slipped, and he had a good view of her profile. It was not unlike that of one of the three goddesses in Rubens's "Judgment of Paris," and in contour was nigh perfection. But it was in her full face that the vision of her mother was most apparent. "Did you cook all this, Avice?" he asked, arousing himself.

She turned and half smiled, merely murmuring, "Yes, sir."

Well he knew the arrangement of those white teeth. In the junction of two of the upper ones there was a slight irregularity; no stranger would have noticed it, nor would he, but that he knew of the same mark in her mother's mouth, and looked for it here. Till Avice the Second had revealed it this moment by her smile he had never beheld that mark since the parting from Avice the First, when she had smiled under his kiss as the copy had done now.

Next morning, when dressing, he heard her through the rickety floor of the building engaged in conversation with the other servants. Having ^{by this time} regularly installed herself as the exponent of the Long-pursued—as one who, by no initiative of his own, had been chosen by some superior power as the vehicle of her next début, she attracted him by the

in his heart

she had well-learned

Insert 26.

He was struck by the exquisite cadences of her voice rather than by its tone.

what seemed soul and heart—resounded. The charm lay in the intervals, using that word in its musical sense. She would say a few syllables in one note, and end her sentence in a soft modulation upwards, then downwards, then into her own note again. The curve of sound was as artistic as any line of beauty ever struck by ^{the} his pencil—as satisfying as the curves of her who was the World's Desire.

The subject of her discourse he cared nothing about—it was no more his interest than his concern. He took special pains that in catching her voice he might not comprehend her words. To the tones he had a right, none

to the articulations. By degrees he could not exist long without this sound.

On Sunday evening he found that she went to church. He followed behind her over the open road, keeping his eye on the little hat with its bunch of cock's feathers as on a star. When she had passed in, Pierston observed her position and took a seat behind her.

Engaged in the study of her ear and the nape of her white neck, he suddenly became aware of the presence of a lady still farther ahead in the aisle, whose attire, though of black materials in the quietest form, was of a cut which rather suggested London than this *Ultima Thule*. For the minute he forgot, in his curiosity, that Avice intervened. The lady turned her head somewhat, and, though she was veiled with unusual thickness for the season, he seemed to recognize ^{her} Nichola Pine-Avon in the form.

Why should Mrs. Pine-Avon be there? Pierston asked himself. If it should, indeed, be she,

The end of the service saw his attention again concentrated on Avice to such a degree that at the critical moment of moving out he forgot the mysterious lady in front of her, and found that she had left the church by the side-

as he could hardly assume that she had come as his account

learned

door. Supposing it to have been Mrs. Pine-Avon, she would probably be discovered staying at one of the hotels at the watering-place over the bay, and to have come along the Pebble-Bank to the island, as so many did, for an evening drive. For the present, however, the explanation was not forthcoming; and he did not seek it.

When he emerged from the church the great placid eye of the lighthouse at the Beal Point was open, and he moved thitherward a few steps to escape Nichola, or her double, and the rest of the congregation. Turning at length, he hastened homeward along the now deserted trackway, intending to overtake ^{the} revitalized Avice. But he could see nothing of her, and concluded that she had walked too fast for him. Arrived ^{at} his own gate, he paused a moment, and perceived that Avice's little freehold was still in darkness. She had not come.

He retraced his steps, but could not find her, the only persons on the road being a man and his wife, as he knew them to be, though he could not see them, from the words of the man:

"If you had not already married me, you ^{would}

cut my acquaintance! That's a pretty thing for a wife to say!"

^{reminisced him} The remark struck his ear unpleasantly, and ^{of his own experience} by-and-by he went back again. Avice's cottage was now lighted: she must have come round by the other road. Satisfied that she was safely domiciled for the night, he opened the gate of Sylvania Castle and retired to his room also. ^{Well-i'-thi' Road}

^(No space in 11M)

Eastward from the grounds the cliffs were rugged and the view of the opposite coast picturesque in the extreme. A little door from the lawn gave him immediate access to the rocks and shore on this side. Without the door was a dip-well of pure water, which possibly had supplied the inmates of the adjoining and now ruinous Red King's castle ^{in the time of the Crusades} at the time of its erection. On a sunny morning he was meditating here when he discerned a figure on the shore below spreading white linen upon the pebbly strand. ^{Anna}

Jocelyn descended, ^{she having} Avice, as he had supposed, ^{had} now returned to her own occupation. Her shapely pink arms, though slight, were plump enough to show dimples at the elbows, and were set off by her purple cotton

print, which the shore breeze licked and tantalized. He stood near, without speaking. The wind dragged a shirt-sleeve from the "popple," of ^{the} pebble, which held it down. Pierston stooped and put a heavier one in its place. ^{then}

"Thank you," she said, quietly. She turned up her hazel eyes, and seemed gratified to perceive that her assistant was Pierston. She had plainly been so wrapped in her own thoughts—gloomy thoughts, by their signs—that she had not considered him till then.

The young girl continued to converse with him in friendly frankness, showing neither ardor nor shyness. As for love—it was evidently farther from her ^{thoughts} mind than even death and dissolution.

When one of the sheets became intractable Jocelyn said, "Do you hold it down, and I'll put the ^{pebbles} popple."

She acquiesced, and in placing a pebble his hand touched hers.

It was a young hand, rather long and thin, a little damp and coddled from her slopping. In setting down the last stone, he laid it, by a pure accident, rather heavily on her fingers.

"I am very, very sorry!" Jocelyn exclaimed. "Oh, I have bruised the skin, Avic!"

seized her fingers to examine the damage done.

"No, Sir, you haven't!" she cried, ^{in a} luminously, allowing him to retain her hand ^{by a} without the least objection. "Why—that's where I scratched it this morning with a pin. You didn't hurt me a bit with the popple-stone!"

Although her gown was purple, there was a little black crape bow upon each arm. He knew what it meant, and it saddened him. "Do you ever visit your mother's grave?" he asked.

"Yes, Sir, sometimes. I am going there to-night to water the daisies."

She had now finished here, and they parted. That evening, when the sky was red, he emerged by the garden-door and passed her house. The blinds were not down, and he could see her sewing within. While he paused she sprang up as if she had forgotten the hour, and tossed on her hat. Jocelyn strode ahead and round the corner, and was half way up the straggling street before he discerned her little figure behind him.

He hastened past the lads and young women with clinking buckets who were drawing water from the fountains by the wayside, and took the direction of the church. With the

disappearance of the ~~sun~~ ^{star} the lighthouse had again set up its flame against the sky, the dark church rising in the foreground. Here he allowed her to overtake him.

"You loved your mother much?" said Jocelyn.

"I did, Sir; of course, I did," said the girl, who tripped so lightly that it seemed he might have carried her on his hand.

Pierston wished to say, "So did I," but did not like to disclose events which she, apparently, did not guess. Avice fell into thought, and continued:

"Mother had a very sad life for some time when she was about as old as I. I should not like mine to be as hers. Her young man proved false to her because she wouldn't agree to ^{island custom} meet him one night, and it grieved mother almost all her life. I wouldn't have fretted about him, if I'd been she. She would never ^{mention} name his name, but I think he was a wicked, cruel man; and I hate to think of him."

After this he could not go into the churchyard with her, and walked onward alone to the south of the isle. He was wretched all night. Yet He would not have stood where he did stand in the ranks of an imaginative

profession if he had not been at the mercy of every ^{statement} succubus of the fancy that can beset man. It was in his weaknesses as a citizen and a national unit that his strength lay as an artist, and he felt it childish to complain of susceptibilities not only innate but cultivated.

But he was paying dearly enough for his

Insert 27.

to offend the cruel Aphrodite that ^{truly} she should scheme this thing against ^Y him?

AVON to the phantom of a dead woman whom he never adored in her lifetime, had taken up her abode in the living representative of the ^{the phantom} dead, with a permanence of hold which the absolute indifference of that little brown-eyed representative only seemed to intensify.

Did he really wish to proceed to marriage with this chit of a girl? He ^{certainly} did; the wish ^{more closely} had come at last. It was true that as he studied her, he saw defects in addition to her social insufficiencies. ^{His} Judgment, hoodwinked as it was, told him that she was colder in ^{her} nature, commoner in character, than that well-read, bright little woman, Avice the First. But twenty years make a difference in ideals, and the added demands of middle-age in physical form are more than balanced by its

concessions as to the spiritual content. He looked at himself in the glass, and felt glad at those inner deficiencies in Avie which formerly would have impelled him to reject her.

There was a strange difference in his regard of his present folly and of his love in his youthful time. Now he could be mad with method, knowing it to be madness; then he was compelled to make-believe his madness wisdom. In those days any flash of reason upon his loved one's imperfections was blurred over hastily and with fear. Such penetrative vision now did not cool him. He knew he was the creature of a tendency; and passively acquiesced *and indulges himself in continuing the pleasant*

To use a practical eye, it appeared that, as he had once thought, this Caro family—though it might not for centuries, or ever, furbish up an individual nature which would exactly, ideally, supplement his own imperfect one and round with it the perfect whole—was yet the only family he had ever met or was likely to meet, which possessed the materials for her making. It was as if the Caros had found the clay but not the potter, while other families whose daughters might attract him had found the potter but not the clay.

HIS OWN SOUL CONFRONTS HIM

FROM his roomy castle, and its grounds and the cliffs hard by, he could command every move and aspect of her who was the rejuvenated Spirit of the Past to him—in the effulgence of whom all sordid details were disregarded.

Among other things, he observed that she was often anxious when it rained. If, after a wet day, a golden streak appeared in the sky over *Deadman's Bay*, under a lid of cloud, her manner was joyous and her tread

Insert 28:

He determined to find out the meaning of this avoidance

she shunned him—stealthily and subtly, but unmistakably. *downhill* One evening, when she had left her cottage and tripped off in the direction of the under-hill townlet, he set out by the same *steep way* route, resolved to await her return along the

high roadway which stretched between that place and East Quarriers. ^{and level} ~~make~~.

He reached the top of the old road, where it makes a sudden descent to the townlet, but she did not appear. Turning back, he sauntered along till he had nearly reached his own house again. Then he retraced his steps, and in the ^{dark} ~~dim~~ night he walked backwards and forwards on the bare and lofty ^{level} ~~convex~~ of the isle; the stars above and around him, the lighthouses on duty at the distant point, the light-ship winking from the sand-bank, the combing of the pebble-beach by the tide, ^{available for} ~~beneath~~, the church away southwestward, where the island fathers lay.

He walked the wild summit till his legs ached and his heart ached—till he seemed to hear on the upper wind the stones of the Slingers whizzing past, and the voices of the invaders who annihilated them and married their wives and daughters, and produced Avice as the ultimate flower of the combined stocks. ^{and} Still she did not come. It was more than foolish to wait, yet he could not help waiting. At length he discerned a dot of a figure, which he knew to be hers rather by its motion than by its shape.

How strange this prepossession was!

1 How incomparably the immaterial dream dwarfed the grandest of substantial things, when here, between those three sublimities—the sky, the rock, and the ^{sea} ~~ocean~~—the minute personality of this washer-girl filled his consciousness to its extremest boundary, and the stupendous inanimate scene shrank to a corner therein!

But all at once the approaching figure had disappeared. He looked about; she had certainly vanished. At one side of the road was a low wall, but she could not have gone behind that without considerable trouble and singular conduct. He looked behind him; she had reappeared farther on the road.

Jocelyn, ^{deliberately ran} ~~Pierston~~ hurried after; and, discerning his movement, Avice stood still. When he came up, she was shyly shaking with restrained laughter.

"Well, what does this mean, my dear girl?" he asked.

Her inner mirth ^{bursting out} ~~escaping~~ in spite of her, she turned askance and said: "When you was following me to ^{stop in} ~~Street~~ ^{Well} ~~Street~~ two hours ago, I looked round and saw you, and huddled behind a stone. You passed and brushed my frock without seeing me. And when, on my

way backalong, I saw you waiting hereabout again, I slipped over the wall, and ran past you. If I had not stopped and looked round at 'ee, you would never have caught me."

"What did you do that for, you elf?"

"That you shouldn't find me."

"That's not exactly a reason. Give another, dear Avice," he said, as he turned and walked beside her homeward.

She hesitated. "Come!" he urged again.

"'Twas because I thought you wanted to be my young man," she answered.

"What a wild thought of yours! Supposing I did, wouldn't you have me?"

"Not now. . . . And not for long, even if it had been sooner than now."

"Why?"

"If I tell you, you won't laugh at me or let anybody else know?"

"Never."

"Then I will tell you," she said, quite seriously. "'Tis because I get tired o' my lovers as soon as I get to know them well. What I see in one young man for a while soon leaves him and goes into another yonder, and I follow, and then what I ^{adore} admire fades out of him and ^{now} springs up somewhere else; and so I fol-

low on, and never fix to one. I have loved fifteen a ready! Yes, fifteen; I am almost ashamed to say," she repeated, laughing. "I can't help it, Sir, I assure you. Of course it is really, to me, the same one all through, only I can't catch him!" She added, anxiously, "You won't tell anybody ^{of} this in me, will you, Sir? Because if it were known I am afraid no man would like me."

now
L.A.

Insert 29
no body would marry me when I wish to marry.

last twenty years. She ^{was} doing it quite involuntarily, by sheer necessity of her organization, puzzled all the while at her own instinct. He suddenly thought of its bearing upon himself, and said, with a sinking heart:

"Am I—one of them?"

She pondered critically.

"You was—for a week—when I first saw you."

"Only a week?"

"About that."

"What made the being of your fancy forsake my form and go elsewhere?"

"Well—though you seemed handsome and gentlemanly at first—"

"Yes?"

"I found ^{you} 'em too old soon after."

"You are a candid young person."

"But you asked me, Sir!" she expostulated.

"I did; and, having been answered, I won't intrude upon you longer. So cut along home as fast as you can. It is getting late."

When she had passed out of earshot he also followed homeward. This ~~seeking~~ ^{searching} of the Well-Beloved was, then, of the nature of a knife which could cut two ways. To be the ~~seeker~~ ^{finder} was one thing; to be one of the corpses from which the ideal inhabitant had departed was another; and this was what he had become now, in the mockery of new Days. ^{was} ~~fall~~ ^{fall}.

Drawing near his own gate he smelled tobacco, and could ^{just} discern two figures in the side lane leading past Avice's door. They did not, however, enter her house, but strolled onward to the narrow pass conducting to Red King ~~castle and the sea~~ ^{castle and the sea}. He was in momentary ~~heaviness~~ ^{great sickness} at the thought that they might be Avice with a worthless lover, but a faintly

argumentative tone from the man informed him that they were the same married couple going homeward whom he had encountered on a previous occasion.

The next day he gave, ^{me 7} the servants a half-holiday to get the pretty Avice into the castle again for a few hours, the better to observe her. While she was pulling down the blinds at sunset a whistle of peculiar quality came from some point on the cliffs outside the lawn. He observed that her color rose slightly, though she bustled about as if she had noticed nothing.

Pierston suddenly suspected that she had not only fifteen past admirers, but a current one. Still, he might be mistaken. Stimulated now by ancient memory and present ~~tenderness~~ ^{passion} to use every effort to make her his wife, despite her conventional unfitness, he strung himself up to sift this mystery. If he could only win her—and how could a country girl refuse such an opportunity?—He could pack her off to school for two or three years, marry her, enlarge her mind by a little travel, and take his chance of the rest. As to her want of ardor for him—so sadly in contrast with her sainted mother's affection—a man

twenty years older than his bride could expect no better, and he would be well content to put up with it in the pleasure of possessing one in whom seemed to linger as an aroma all the charm of his youth and his early home.

Chap. VIII.

JUXTAPOSITIONS

It was a sad and leaden afternoon, and Pierston paced up the long, steep ^{street} pass, or ~~Street~~ ^{St. Julian's} of Wells. On either ^{side} sides of the road young girls stood with pitchers at the fountains which bubbled ^{up} there, and behind the houses forming the propylæa of the rock rose the massive ^{summit} forehead of the isle—crested ^{crowded} at this part with its enormous ramparts as with a mural crown.

As you approach the upper end of the street all progress seems about to be checked ^{prevented} by the almost vertical face of the escarpment, ^{into} ^{which} ~~it~~ your track apparently runs point-blank: a confronting mass which, if it were to slip down, would overwhelm the whole town. But in a moment you find that the road, the old Roman highway into the peninsula, turns at a sharp angle when it reaches the base of the scrap, and ascends in the stiffest of in-

cline to the right. To the left there is also another ascending road, modern, almost as steep as the first, and perfectly straight. This is the road to the forts.

Pierston arrived at the forking of the ways, and paused for breath. Before turning to the right, his proper and picturesque course, he looked up the uninteresting left road to the fortifications. It was new, long, white, regular, tapering to a vanishing point, like a lesson in perspective. About a quarter of the way up a girl was resting beside a basket of white linen; and by the shape of her hat and the nature of her burden he recognized her *to be Arice.*

She did not see him, and, abandoning the right-hand course, he slowly ascended the incline she had taken. *Drawing near, he* He observed that her attention was absorbed by something aloft. He followed the direction of her gaze. Above them towered the green-gray mountain of grassy stone, here levelled at the top by military art. The skyline was broken every now and then by a little peg-like object—a sentry-box; and near one of these a small red spot kept creeping backward and forward monotonously against the heavy sky.

Then he divined that she had a soldier-lover.

She turned her head, saw him, and took up her clothes-basket to continue the ascent. The steepness was such that to climb it unencumbered was a breathless business; the linen made her task a cruelty to her. "You'll never get to the forts with that weight," he said. "Give it to me."

But she would not, and he stood still, watching her as she panted up the way; for the moment, an irradiated being, the epitome of a whole sex; by the beams of his own infatuation

... "robed in such exceeding glory
That he beheld her not;"

that is,
beheld her not, as she really was, as she was even to himself sometimes. But to the soldier what was she? Smaller and smaller she waned up the rigid mathematical road, still gazing ^{up} at the soldier aloft, as Pierston gazed ^{up} at her. He could just discern sentinels springing up at the different coigns of vantage ~~that~~ she passed, but, seeing who she was, they did not intercept her; and presently she crossed the drawbridge over the enormous

chasm surrounding the forts, passed the sentries there also, and disappeared through the arch into the interior. Pierston could not see the sentry now, and there occurred to him the hateful idea that this scarlet rival was meeting and talking freely to her, the unprotected orphan girl of his sweet original Avic; perhaps, relieved of duty, escorting her across the interior, carrying her basket, her tender body encircled by his arm.

"What the devil are you staring at, as if you were in a trance?"

Pierston turned his head, and there stood his old friend Somers—still looking the long-leaved bachelor that he was.

"I might say what the devil do you do here if I weren't so glad to see you."

Somers said that he had come to see what was detaining his friend in such an out-of-the-way place at that time of year, and incidentally to get some fresh air into his own lungs. Pierston made him welcome, and they went towards Sylvania Castle.

"You were staring, as far as I could see, at a pretty little washerwoman with a basket of clothes," resumed the painter.

"Yes; it was that to you, but not to me.

Behind the mere pretty island girl (to the world) is, in my eye, the Idea, in Platonic phraseology—the essence and epitome of all that is desirable in this existence. . . . I am under a ~~doom~~ ^{curse}, Somers. Yes, I am under a ~~doom~~ ^{curse}. To ~~have~~ ^{be} been always following a phantom whom I saw in woman after woman while she was at a distance, but vanishing away on close approach, was bad enough; but now the terrible thing is that the phantom does *not* vanish, but stays to tantalize me, even when I am near enough to see what it is! That girl holds me, *though* my eyes are open, and *though* I see that I am a fool!"

Somers regarded the visionary look of his friend, which rather intensified than decreased as his years wore on, but made no further remark. When they reached the castle Somers gazed round upon the scenery, and Pierston, signifying the quaint little Elizabethan cottage, said, "That's where she lives," ^{altogether!}
 "What a romantic place!—and this island altogether. A man might love a scarecrow or turnip-lantern here."

"But a woman mightn't. Scenery doesn't impress them, though they pretend it does. This girl is as fickle as—"

"You once were."

"Exactly—from your point of view. She has told me so—candidly. And it hits me hard."

Somers stood still in sudden thought. "Well—that *is* a strange turning of the tables!" he said. "But you wouldn't really marry her, Pierston?"

"I would—to-morrow. Why shouldn't I? What are fame and name and society to me—a descendant of wreckers and smugglers, like her. Besides, I know what she's made of, my boy, to her innermost fibre; I know the perfect and pure quarry she was dug from, and that gives a man confidence."

"Then you'll win."

While they were sitting after dinner that evening their quiet discourse was interrupted by the long low whistle from the cliffs with-

Insert 30

phrodite's own messenger in a kitchen - was there ever such satire to man of art!

upon the dark lawn. A crunching of feet upon the gravel mixed in with the articula-

tion of the sea—steps light as if they were winged. And ^{then he knew} he supposed, two minutes later, that the mouth of some hulking fellow was upon hers, which he himself hardly ventured to look at, so touching was its young beauty.

Hearing people about—among others a couple quarrelling, for there were rough as well as gentle people here in the island—he returned to the house. Next day Somers roamed abroad to look for scenery for a marine painting, and, going out to seek him, Pierston met Avice.

"So you have a lover, my lady!" he said, severely, ^{to which} she admitted that it was the fact. "You won't stick to him," he continued.

"I think I may *this* one," said she, in a meaning tone that he failed to fathom. "He deserted me once, but he won't again."

"I suppose he's a wonderful sort of fellow."

"He's good enough for me."

"So handsome, no doubt."

"Handsome enough for me."

"So refined and respectable."

"Refined and respectable enough for me."

He could not disturb her equanimity, and let her pass. The next day was Sunday, and,

Somers having chosen his view at the other
end of the island, **Insert 31**
divining the direction they would be
likely to take

on towards the lighthouses at the Beal. Turn-
ing back when he had reached the nearest, he
saw on the lonely road between the quarries a

Insert 32
a girl upon his arm in whom he
soon recognised Avice, the Second.

He gazed under his glance. The maid was
the typical island physiognomies—his features
energetic and wary in their expression, and
half covered with a close, crisp, black beard.
Pierston fancied that out of his keen dark eyes

Insert 33
as though he meant to say, "Isn't
this a joke, sir? I've got the
pretty girl, and you've got the blues."

her dear mother's sake ^{almost} more than for her own
unquestionable attractiveness, he would have
guarded as the apple of his eye, how could she
estimate him so flippantly?
The mortification of having brought himself
to this position with the antitype by his early
sight of the type ^{her who was} blinded him for the moment
to what struck him a short time after. The

man upon whose arm she hung was not a sol-
dier. What, then, became of her entranced
gaze at the sentinel? She could hardly have
transferred her affections so promptly; or, to

Insert 34.
On account of this puzzling inci-
dent he did not attempt to seek out
Alfred Somers.

ly in the dusk to her?

Without further attempt to find Alfred
Somers, Pierston walked homeward, moodily
thinking that the desire to make reparation to
the original woman by wedding and enriching
the copy—which lent such an unprecedented
permanence to his new love—was thwarted,
as if by set intention of his destiny.

At the door of the grounds about the castle
there stood a carriage. He observed that it
was not one of the homely fays from the un-
der-hill town, but ^{from the away Well} apparently from the fashion-
able town across the bay. Wondering why
the visitor had not driven in, he entered, to
find in the drawing-room, ^{no other person than} Nichola Pine-Avon.

At his first glance upon her, fashionably
dressed and graceful in movement, she seemed
beautiful; at the second, when he observed
that her face was pale and agitated, she

seemed pathetic likewise. Altogether, she was now a very different figure from her who, sitting in ^{her} chair with such finished composure, had snubbed him in her drawing-room in Hamptonshire Square.

"You are surprised at this? Of course you are," she said, in a low, pleading voice, languidly lifting her heavy eyelids, while he was holding her hand. "But I couldn't help it. I know I have done something to offend you—have I not? Oh, what can it be, that you have come away to this outlandish rock, to live with barbarians in the midst of the London season?"

"You have not offended me, dear Mrs. Pine-Avon," he said. "How sorry I am that you should have supposed it! Yet I am glad, too, that your fancy should have done me the good turn of bringing you here to see me."

"I am staying at Budmouth-Regis," she explained.

"Then I did see you at a church-service here a little while back?"

She blushed faintly upon her pallor, and she sighed. Their eyes met. "Well," she said, at last, "I don't know why I shouldn't show the virtue of candor. You know what it means.

I was the stronger once; now I am the weaker. Whatever pain I may have given you in the ups and downs of our acquaintance I am sorry for, and would willingly repair all errors of the past by—being amenable to reason in the future."

It was impossible that Jocelyn should not feel a tender impulsion towards this attractive and once independent woman, who from every worldly point of view was an excellent match for him—a superior match, indeed, except in money. He took her hand again and held it awhile, and a faint wave of gladness seemed to flow through her. But no—he could go no further. That island girl, in her coquettish Sunday frock and little hat with its bunch of cock's feathers, held him as by strands of Manila rope. He dropped Nichola's hand.

"I am leaving Budmouth to-morrow," she said. "That was why I felt I must call. You did not know I had been there all through the Whitsun holidays?"

"I did not, indeed; or I should have come to see you."

"I didn't like to write. I wish I had, now!"

"I wish you had, too, dear Mrs. Pine-Avon."

But it was "Nichola" that she wanted to be.

As they reached the landau he told her that he should be back in town himself again soon, and would call immediately. At the moment of his words Avice Caro, now alone, passed close along by the carriage on the other side towards her house hard at hand. She did not turn head or eye to the pair; they seemed to be in her view objects of indifference.

Pierston became cold as a stone. The chill towards Nichola that the presence of the girl—sprite, witch, ^{evil} troll that she was—brought with it came like a doom. ^{in common speech} He knew what fool he was, as he had said. But he was ^{utterly} powerless in the grasp of the idealizing passion. He cared more for Avice's finger-tips than for Mrs. Pine-Avon's whole personality.

Perhaps Nichola saw it, for she said, mournfully: "Now I have done all I could! I felt that the only counterpoise to my cruelty to you in my drawing-room would be to come as a suppliant to yours."

"It is most handsome and noble of you, my very dear friend!" said he, with an emotion of courtesy rather than of enthusiasm.

Then adieux were spoken, and she drove away. But Pierston saw only the retreating Avice, and knew that he was helpless in her

his punishment¹⁷⁵ for his idolatry had come.

hands. The church of the island had risen near the foundations of the Pagan temple, and a Christian emanation from the former might be wrathfully torturing him through the very false gods to whom he had devoted himself both in his craft, like Demetrius of Ephesus, and in his heart. Perhaps divine punishment for his idolatries had come.

Chap. XIX

x when closely
SHE FAILS TO VANISH STILL Confronted

PIERSTON had not turned far back towards the castle when he was overtaken by Somers and the man who carried his painting lumber. They paced together to the door; the man deposited the articles and went away, and the two walked up and down before entering.

"I met an extremely interesting woman in the road out there," said the painter.

"Ah, she is! A sprite, a sylph; Psyche indeed!"

"I was struck with her."

"It shows how beauty will out through the homeliest guise."

"Yes, it will; though not always. And this case doesn't prove it, for the lady's attire was in the latest and most approved taste."

"Oh, you mean the lady who was driving?"

"Of course. What! were you thinking of

the pretty little cottage-girl outside here? I did meet her, but what's she? Very well for one's picture, though hardly for one's fireside. This lady—"

"Is Mrs. Pine-Avon. A kind, proud woman, who'll do what people with no pride would not condescend to think of. She is leaving Budmouth to-morrow, and she drove across to see me. You know how things seemed to be going with us at one time? But I am no good to any woman. She's been very generous towards me, which I've not been to her. . . . She'll ultimately throw herself away upon some wretch, unworthy of her, no doubt."

"Do you think so?" murmured Somers. After a while he said, abruptly, "I'll marry her myself, if she'll have me. I like the look of her."

"I wish you would, Alfred, or rather could. She has long had an idea of slipping out of the world of fashion into the world of art. She is a woman of individuality and earnest instincts. I am in real trouble about her. I won't say she can be won—it would be ungenerous of me to say that. But try. I can bring you together easily."

"I'll marry her, if she's willing!" With the phlegmatic dogmatism that was part of him, Somers added, "When you have decided to marry, take the first nice woman you meet. They are all alike."

"Well—you don't know her yet," replied Jocelyn, who could ^{at least} give praise where he could not give love.

"But you do, and I'll take her on the strength of your judgment. Is she really ^{handsome}—I had but the merest glance. But I know she is, or she wouldn't have caught your discriminating eye."

"You may take my word for it; she looks as well at hand as afar."

"What color are her eyes?"

"Her eyes? I don't go much into color, being professionally sworn to form. But, let me see—gray; and her hair rather light than dark brown."

"I wanted something darker," said Somers, airily. "There are so many fair models among native Englishwomen. Still, blondes are useful property! . . . Well, well; this is flippancy. But I liked the look of her."

Somers had gone back to town. It was a

wet day on the little peninsula, but Pierston walked out as far as the garden-house of his hired castle, where he sat down and smoked. This erection being on the boundary-wall of his property, his ear could now and then catch the tones of ^{Avice's} voice from her open-doored cottage ^{a few yards off} in the lane which skirted his fence; and he noticed that there were no modulations in it. He knew why that was. She wished to go out, and could not. He had observed before that when she was planning an outing a particular note would come into her voice during the preceding hours—a dove's roundness of sound; no doubt the effect upon her voice of her thoughts of her lover, or lovers. Yet the latter it could not be. She was ^{absolutely} pure and single-hearted; half an eye could see that. Whence, then, the two men? Possibly the quarrier was a relation. There seemed reason in this, when, going ^{out} out into the lane, he encountered one of the ^{red-jackets} he had been thinking of. Soldiers were seldom seen in this outer part of the isle; their beat from the forts, when on pleasure, was ^{usually} in the opposite direction, and this man must have had a special reason for coming hither. Pierston surveyed him. He was

a round-faced, ^{beer-blown} good-humored fellow to look at, having two little pieces of mustache on his upper lip, like a pair of minnows rampant, and small black eyes, over which the Glengarry cap straddled flat. It was a hateful idea that her tender cheek should be kissed by the lips of this ^{heavy} young man, who had never been sublimed by a single battle, even with defenceless savages.

The ^{old} soldier went before her house, looked at the door, and ^{crossed} moved on down the crooked way to the cliffs, where there was a path back to the forts. But he did not adopt it, returning by the way he had come. This showed his wish to pass the house ^{again}. She gave no sign, however, and the soldier disappeared.

Pierston could not be satisfied that Avice was in the house, and he ^{to an inconceivable degree} crossed over to the front of her little freehold and tapped at the door, which stood ajar.

Nobody came, ^{and} hearing a slight movement within, he crossed the threshold. Avice was there alone, sitting on a low stool in a dark corner, as though she wished to be unobserved by any casual passer-by. She looked up at him without emotion or apparent surprise; but he could then see that she was

crying. The view, for the first time, of distress in an unprotected young girl, towards whom he felt drawn by ties of extraordinary delicacy and tenderness, moved Pierston beyond measure. He entered without ceremony.

"Avice, my dear girl!" he said. "Something is the matter!"

She looked ^{a pallid} assent, and he went on: "Now tell me all about it. Perhaps I can help you. Come, tell me."

"I can't," she murmured. "Gammer Stockwool is upstairs, and she'll hear!" (Mrs. Stockwool was the old woman who had come to live with the girl for company since her mother's death.)

"Then come into my garden opposite.

There we shall be quite private."

^{In answer to this} She rose, put on her hat, and accompanied him to the door. Here she asked him if the lane were empty, ^{looking up and down and} and on his assuring her that it was she crossed over and entered with him through the garden-wall.

The place was a shady and secluded one, though through the boughs the sea could be seen quite near at hand, its moanings being distinctly audible. A water-drop from a tree

fell here and there, but the rain was not enough to hurt them.

"Now let me hear it," he said, soothingly. "You may tell me with the greatest freedom. I was a friend of your mother's, you know. That is, I knew her; and I'll be a friend of yours."

The statement was risky, ^{Avice} if he wished her not to suspect him of being her mother's false

Insert 35.
the failing I owned to you,
if it is a failing.

insert LN.
changeableness. The rest is the secret of somebody else."

"I am sorry for that," said he.

"I am getting to care for one I ought not to think of, and it means ruin. I ^{wish I could} get away!"

"You mean from the island?"

"Yes."

Pierston reflected. His presence in London

Insert 36
this spot had latterly become endeared to him—partly by old memories revived, partly by their reembodiment in the new form at his side.

might remove her from some looming danger. It was a somewhat awkward guardianship for him, as a lonely man, to carry out; still, it could be done. He asked her abruptly if she would really like to go away for a while.

"I like best to stay here," she answered. "Still, I should not mind going somewhere, because I think I ought to."

"Would you like London?"

Avice's face lost its weeping shape. "How could that be?" she said.

"I have been thinking that you could come to my house and make yourself useful in some way. I rent just now one of those new places called flats, which you may have heard of, and I have a studio at the back."

"I haven't heard of 'em," she said, without interest.

"Well, I have two servants there, and, as my man has a holiday, you can help them for a month or two."

"Would polishing furniture be any good? I can do that."

"I haven't much furniture that requires polishing. But you can clear away plaster and clay messes in the studio, and chippings of stone, and help me in modelling, and dust

Carl's ?
all my Venus failures, and hands and heads and feet and bones and other objects." She was startled, yet attracted ^{almost fascinated} by the novelty of the proposal.

"Only for a time," she said.

"Only for a time. As short as you like, and as long."

The deliberate manner in which, after the first surprise, Avice discussed the arrangements that he suggested might have told him how far was any feeling for himself, beyond friendship, and possibly gratitude, ^{was occupying} from agitating her breast. Yet there was nothing ^{really} extravagant in the discrepancy between their ages, and he hoped, after shaping her to himself, to win her. What had grieved her to tears she would not more particularly tell.

There was
She had naturally not much need of preparation, but she made even less preparation than he would have expected her to require. She seemed eager to be off immediately, and not a soul was to know of her departure. Why, if she were in love and at first averse to leave the island, she should be so precipitate now he failed to understand.

*See I want to. 182
for this passage
p. 182*

But he took great care to compromise in no way a girl in whom his interest was as pro-

Insert 37.

There was naturally not much need of preparation for Avice, and she seemed willing and even anxious to start, making less preparation than, being a woman, he would have expected her to require. He could not understand why, if she were in love, and had felt averse to leave the island, she should be so precipitate now. Above all, not a soul was to know of her departure.

Fancying her wishes on this point to be based on her fear of rumour, he took great care to compromise in no way a girl in whom his interest was as protective as it was passionate. P. accordingly left her to get out of the island alone, but he awaited her at a station a few miles up the railway, where, discovering himself to her through the carriage window, he entered the next compartment, his frame pervaded by a glow which was almost joy at having for the first time in his charge one who inherited the flesh and bore the name so early associated with his own, and only not united to him through the merest trick of time.

A sense of putting things right which had been wrong through so many years sustained P. in the face of this too obviously unusual step of bestowing so much attention upon one who, in a worldly view, would at the best be a clog upon his social and artistic activities, should these, which had now slept for some while, again awaken.

XX.

A Homely Medium does not Ball the Image.

THE IMAGE PERSISTS

IT was dark when the four-wheeled cab wherein he had brought Avice from the station stood at the entrance to the pile of flats of which Pierston occupied one floor—rarer than, as residences in London than they are now. Leaving Avice to alight and get the luggage ^{less common} taken in by the porter, Pierston went up-stairs. To his surprise his floor was silent, and, on entering with a latch-key, the rooms were all in darkness. He descended to the hall, where Avice was standing helpless beside the luggage, while the porter was outside with the cabman.

"Do you know what has become of my servants?" asked Jocelyn.

"What—and ain't they there, Saur? Ah, then, my belief is that what I suspected is thue! You didn't leave your wine-cellar unlocked, did you, Saur, by no mistake?"

190

Pierston considered. He thought he might have left the key with his elder servant, whom he had believed he could trust, especially as the cellar was not well stocked.

"Ah, then, it was so! She's been very queer, Saur, this last week or two. Oh yes, sending messages down the spakin'-tube which were like madness itself, and ordering us this and that, till we would take no notice

Insert 38.

"I see the housemaid go out one morning, and possibly she went for good."

bringing out of a man, too, though it's not me duty at all!"

When Pierston got to his floor again he found that the cellar door was open; some bottles were standing empty that had been full, and many abstracted altogether. All other articles in the house, however, appeared to be intact. His letter to his housekeeper lay in the box as the postman had left it.

By this time the luggage had been sent up in the lift; and Avice, like so much more luggage, stood at the door, the hall-porter behind offering his assistance.

"Come here, Avice," said the sculptor.

191

"What shall we do now? Here's a pretty state of affairs!"

Avice could suggest nothing, till she was struck with the bright thought that she should light a fire.

"Light a fire? Ah, yes. . . . I wonder if we could manage. This is an odd coincidence—and awkward!" he murmured. "Very well, light a fire."

"Is this the kitchen, *Sir*, all mixed up with the parlors?"

"Yes."

"Then I think I can do all that's wanted here for a bit; at any rate, till you can get help, *Sir*. At least, I could if I could find the fuel-house. 'Tis no such big place as I thought!"

"That's right—take courage!" said he, with a tender smile. "Now, I'll dine out this evening, and leave the place for you to arrange as best you can with the help of the porter's wife down-stairs."

This *Pierston* accordingly did, and so their common residence began. Feeling more and more strongly that some dangers awaited her in her native island, he determined not to send her back till the lover or lovers who seemed

to trouble her should have cooled off. He was quite willing to take the risk of his action thus far in his solicitous regard for her.

It was a dual solitude, indeed; for, though *Pierston* and Avice were the only two people in the flat, they did not keep each other company, the former being as scrupulously fearful of going near her now that he had the opportunity as he had been prompt to seek her when he had none. They lived in silence, his messages to her being frequently written on scraps of paper deposited where she could see them. It was not without a pang that he ^{scarcely} noted her unconsciousness of their isolated position—a position to which, had she experienced any reciprocity of sentiment, she would readily have been alive.

Considering that, though not profound, she was hardly a matter-of-fact girl, as that phrase is commonly understood, she was exasperating in the matter-of-fact quality of her responses to the ^{occasional} friendly remarks which would escape him in spite of himself, as well as in her general conduct. Whenever he formed some culinary excuse for walking across the ^{few} yards ^{or all} of tessellated hall which separated his room

from the kitchen and spoke through the doorway to her, she answered, "Yes, sir," or "No, sir," without turning her eyes from the particular work that she was engaged in.

In the usual course, he would have obtained a couple of properly qualified servants immediately; but he lived on with the one, or rather the less than one, that ^{the person} this cottage-girl afforded. It had been his almost invariable custom to dine at one of his clubs. Now he sat at home over the miserable chop or steak, to which he limited himself, in dread lest she should complain of there being too much work for one person and demand to be sent home. A charwoman came every two or three days, effecting an extraordinary consumption of food and alcoholic liquids: yet it was not for this that Pierston dreaded her presence, but lest, in conversing with Avice, she should open the girl's eyes to the oddity of her situation. Avice could see for herself that there must have been two or three servants in the flat during his former residence there; but his reasons for doing without them seemed never to strike her.

His ^{original} intention had been to keep her occupied exclusively at the studio, but accident had modified this. However, he sent her round

one morning, and, entering himself shortly after, found her engaged in wiping the layers of dust from the casts and models.

The color of the dust never ceased to amaze her. "It is like the hold of a Budmouth collier," she said, "and the beautiful faces of these clay people are quite spoiled by it."

"I suppose you'll marry some day, Avice?" remarked Pierston, ^{without replying} as he regarded her thoughtfully.

"Some do and some don't," she said, with a reserved smile, still attending to the casts.

"You are very offhand," said he.

She archly weighed that remark without further speech. It was tantalizing conduct in the face of his instinct to cherish her; especially when he regarded the charm of her bending profile, the well-characterized though softly lined nose, the round chin, with, as it were, a second leap in its curve to the throat, and the sweep of the eyelashes over the rosy cheek during the sedulously lowered glance. How futilely he had labored to express the character of that face in clay, and, while catching it in substance, had yet lost something that was essential to it!

That evening, at dusk, in the stress of writing

letters, he sent her out for stamps. She had been absent some quarter of an hour when, suddenly drawing himself up from over his writing-table, it flashed upon him that he had absolutely forgotten her total ignorance of London.

The head post-office, to which he had sent her because it was late, was two or three streets off, and he had made his request in the most general manner, which she had acceded to with alacrity enough. How could he have done such an unreflecting thing?

Pierston went to the window. It was about nine o'clock, and owing to her absence, the blinds were not down. He opened the casement and stepped out upon the balcony. The green shade of his lamp screened its rays from the gloom without. Over the opposite square ^{a yellow} the moon hung, and to the right there stretched a long street, filled with a diminishing array of lamps, some single, some in clusters, among them an occasional blue or red one. From a corner came the notes of a piano-organ ^{strumming} out a stirring march of Rossini. The shadowy black figures of pedestrians moved up, down, and across the embrowned roadway. Above the roofs was a bank of livid mist, and higher a greenish-blue sky, in which stars were

visible, though its lower part was still pale with daylight, against which rose chimney-pots in the form of elbows, prongs, and fists.

From the whole scene proceeded a ground rumble, miles in extent, ^{and} upon which individual rattles, voices, a tin whistle, the bark of a dog, ^{and the rattle of wheels} rode like bubbles on a sea. The whole noise impressed him with the sense that no one in its enormous mass ever required rest.

In this illimitable ocean of humanity there was a unit of existence, his Avice, wandering alone.

Pierston looked at his watch. She had been gone half an hour. It was impossible to distinguish her at this distance, even if she approached. He came inside, and, putting on his hat, determined to go out and seek her. He reached the end of the street, and there was nothing of her to be seen. She had the option of two or three routes from this point to the post-office; yet he plunged at random into one, till he reached the office, to find it quite deserted. Almost distracted now by his anxiety for her, he retreated as rapidly as he had come, ^{regain} home only to find that she had not returned.

He ^{suddenly} recollected telling her that if she should

ever lose her way she must call a cab and drive home. It occurred to him that this was what she would do now. He again went out upon the balcony; the dignified street in which he lived was almost ^{vacant and silent} vacant, and the lamps stood like placed sentinels ^{for} waiting some procession ^{which did not arrive.} which tarried long. At a point under him where the road was torn up there stood a red light, and at the corner two men were talking in leisurely repose, as if sunning themselves at noonday. Lovers of a feline disposition, who were never seen by daylight, joked and darted at each other in ^{as they passed} and out of area gates.

His attention was fixed on the cabs, and he held his breath as the hollow clap of each horse's hoofs drew near the front of the house only to go onward into the square. The two lamps of each vehicle ^{in the far distance} afar dilated with its ^{near} approach, and seemed to swerve towards him. It was ^{she} Avice surely? No, it passed by.

Almost frantic, he again descended and let himself out of the house, moving towards a more central part, where the roar still continued. Before emerging into the noisy thoroughfare he observed a small figure approaching leisurely along the opposite side, and hastened across to find it was she.

"OH, Avice!" he cried, with the tenderly subdued scolding of a mother. "What is this you have done to alarm me so?"

She seemed ^{quite} unconscious of having done anything, and was altogether surprised at his anxiety. In his relief he did not speak further, ^{for a while;} till he asked her suddenly if she would take his arm, since she must be tired.

"Oh no, Sir," she assured him, "I am not a bit tired, and I don't require any help at all, thank you!"

They went up-stairs without using the lift, and he let her and himself in with his latch-key. She entered the kitchen, and he, following, sat down in a chair there.

"Where have you been?" he said, ^{renewing the subject} with almost angered concern on his face. "You ought not to have been absent more than ten minutes."

"I knew there was nothing for me to do, and thought I should like to see a little of London," she replied, naively. "So when I had got the strops I went on into the fashionable streets, where folks are all walking about just as if it were daytime! 'Twas for all the world like coming home by night from Martinmas Fair at the Street o' Wells, only more genteel!"

"Oh, Avice, Avice, you must not go out like this! Don't you know that I am responsible for your safety? I am your—well, guardian, in fact, and am bound by law and morals, and I don't know what-all, to deliver you up to your native island without a scratch or blemish. And yet you indulge in such a midnight vagary as this!"

"But I am sure, Sir, the people in the street were more respectable than they are anywhere at home! They were dressed in the latest fashion, and would have scorned to do me any harm; and as to their love-making, I never heard anything so polite before."

"Well, you must not do it again. I'll tell you some day why. What's that you have in your hand?"

"A mouse-trap. There are lots of mice in

this kitchen—sooty mice, not clean like ours—and I thought I'd try to catch them. That was what I went so far to buy, as there were no shops open just about here. I'll set it now."

She proceeded at once to do so, and Pierston remained in his seat regarding the operation which seemed entirely to engross her. It was extraordinary, indeed, to observe how she wilfully limited her interests; with what content she received the ordinary things that life offered, and persistently refused to behold what an infinitely extended life lay open to her through him. If she had only said the word, he would have got a license and married her the next morning. Was it possible that she did not perceive this tendency in him? She could hardly be a woman if she did not; and in her airy, elusive, offhand demeanor she was very much of a woman indeed.

"It only holds one mouse," he said, absently.

"But I shall hear it throw in the night, and set it again."

He sighed, and left her to her own resources and retired to rest, though he felt no tendency to sleep. At some small hour of the darkness, owing, possibly, to some intervening door being left open, he heard the mouse-trap click.

Another light sleeper must have heard it too, for almost immediately after the pit-pat of naked feet, accompanied by the brushing of drapery, was audible along the passage towards the kitchen. *an absence of the pit-patting figure* After her absence in that apartment long enough to reset the trap, he was startled by a scream from the same quarter. Pierston sprang out of bed, jumped into his dressing-gown, and hastened in the direction of the cry.

Avice, barefooted and wrapped in a shawl, was standing ⁱⁿ on a chair; the mouse-trap lay on the floor, the mouse running round and round in its neighborhood.

"I was trying to take ^{him} en out," said she, excitedly, "and he got away from me!"

Pierston secured the mouse while she remained standing on the chair. Then, having set the trap anew, his feeling burst out, petulantly:

"A girl like you to throw yourself away upon such a commonplace fellow as that quarryman! Why do you do it?"

Her mind was so intently fixed upon the matter in hand that it was some moments before she caught his irrelevant subject. "Because I am a foolish girl," she said, quietly.

"What! Don't you love him?" said Jocelyn, with a surprised stare up at her as she stood, in her concern appearing the very Avice who had kissed him twenty years earlier.

"It is not much use to talk about that," said she.

"Then is it the soldier?"

"Yes, though I have never spoken to him."

"Never spoken to the soldier?"

"Never."

"Has either one treated you badly—deceived you?"

"No. Certainly not."

"Well, I can't make you out; and I don't wish to know more than you choose to tell me. Come, Avice, why not tell me exactly how things are?"

"Not now, ^{entreats} Sir!" she said, her pretty pink face and brown eyes turned in simple appeal to him from her pedestal. "I will tell you all to-morrow; ^{and} ~~and~~ that I will!"

He retreated to his own room and lay down meditating. Some quarter of an hour after she had retreated to hers the mouse-trap clicked again, and Pierston raised himself on his elbow to listen. The place was so still and the jerry-built door-panels so thin that he could

hear the mouse jumping about inside the wires

Insert 39.

Disliking the idea of the little creature's misery, he again arose, proceeded to the kitchen with a light, and put the mouse to a merciful death.

but that thoughtful housewife had not heard the second capture. From the room came a soft breathing like that of an infant.

He entered his own chamber and reclined himself gloomily enough. Her ^{freedom from} lack of all consciousness of him, the aspect of the deserted kitchen, the cold grate, impressed him with a deeper sense of loneliness than he had ever felt before.

Foolish he was, indeed, ^{to be the slave of this} ~~to be so devoted to~~ ^{young creature.} ~~this young woman.~~ Her defencelessness, her freedom from the least thought that there lurked a danger in ^{the} their propinquity, were in fact secondary safeguards, not much less strong than that of her being her mother's image, against risk to her from him. Yet it was out of this that his depression came.

At sight of her the next morning ^{so} Pierston felt that he must put an end to such a state of things. He sent Avice off to the studio, wrote

to an agent for a couple of servants, and then went round to his work. Avice was busy righting all that she was allowed to touch. It was the girl's delight to be occupied among the models and casts, which for the first time she regarded with the wistful interest of a soul struggling to receive ideas of ^{the beautiful} beauty, vaguely discerned yet ever eluding her. That brightness in her mother's mind, which might have descended to the second Avice with the maternal face and form, had been dimmed by admixture with the mediocrity of her father's, and ^{By} one who remembered, like Pierston, the dual organization, the opposites could be often seen wrestling internally.

They were alone in the studio, and his feelings found vent. Putting his arms round her he said, "My darling, sweet little Avice! I want to ask you something—surely you guess what? I want you to know this: will you be married to me, and live here with me always and ever?"

"Oh, Mr. ^{so} Pierston, what nonsense!"

"Nonsense?" said he, shrinking somewhat.

"Yes, Sir."

"Well, why? Am I too old? Surely there's no serious difference?"

"Oh no—I should not mind that if it came to marrying. The difference is not much for husband and wife, though it is rather much for *love* keeping company."

She struggled to get free, and when in the movement she knocked down the Empress Faustina's head he did not try to retain her. He saw that she was not only surprised, but a little alarmed.

"You haven't said why it is nonsense!" he remarked, tartly.

"Why, I didn't know you was thinking of me like that. I hadn't any thought of it. And all alone here! What shall I do?"

"Say yes, my pretty Avice! We'll then go out and be married at once, and nobody be any the wiser."

She shook her head. "I couldn't, *Sir*."

"It would be well for you. You don't like me, perhaps?"

"Yes, I do—*very much*. But not in that sort of way—quite. Still, I might have got to *love* you in time, if—"

"Well, then, try," he said, warmly. "Your mother did!"

No sooner had the words slipped out than *Pierston* would have recalled them. He had

felt in a moment that they *the hazardous* jeopardized his cause.

"Mother loved you?" said Avice, incredulously gazing at him.

"Yes," he murmured.

"You were not her false young man, surely? That one who—"

"Yes, yes! Say no more about it."

"Who ran away from her?"

"Almost."

"Then I can *never, never* like you again! I didn't know it was a gentleman—I—I thought—"

"It wasn't a gentleman, then."

"Oh, *Sir*, please go away! I can't bear the sight of 'ee at this moment! Perhaps I shall get to—to like you as I did; but—"

"No; I'm d—d if I'll go away!" said *Pierston*, thoroughly irritated. "I have been candid with you; you ought to be the same with me!"

"What do you want me to tell?"

"Enough to make it clear to me why you don't accept this offer. Everything you have said yet is a reason for the reverse. Now, my dear, I am not angry."

"Yes, you are."

"No, I'm not. Now, what is your reason?"

"The name of it is Isaac ^{on} Pierston, down home."

"How?"

"I mean he courted me, and led me on to island custom, and then I went to chapel one morning and married him in secret, because mother didn't care about him; and I didn't either by that time. And then he quarrelled with me; and just before you and I came to London he went away to ^{Australia} ~~Guernsey~~. Then I saw a soldier; I never knew his name, but I fell in love with him because I am so quick at that! Still, as it was wrong, I tried not to think of him, and wouldn't look at him when he passed. But it made me cry very much that I mustn't. I was then very miserable, and you asked me to come to London. I didn't care what I did with myself, and I came."

"Heaven above us!" said ^{so} Pierston, his pale and distressed face showing with what a shock this announcement had come. "Why have you done such extraordinary things? Or, rather, why didn't you tell me of this before? Then, at the present moment you are the wife of a man who is in ^{Guernsey} ~~Guernsey~~, whom you do

not love at all, but instead of him love a soldier whom you have never spoken to, while I have nearly brought scandal upon us both by your letting me love you. Really, you are a very wicked woman!"

"No, I am not!" she pouted.

Still, Avice looked pale and rather frightened, and did not lift her eyes from the floor. "I said it was nonsense in you to want to have me!" she went on, "and even if I hadn't been married to that horrid Isaac Pierston I couldn't have married you after you told me that you was the man who ran away from my mother."

"I have paid the penalty!" he said, sadly.

"Men of my sort always get the worst of it ^{in the end} ~~somehow~~. Now, Avice—I'll call you dear Avice for your mother's sake and not for your own—I must see what I can do to help you out of the difficulty that unquestionably you are in. Why can't you love your husband, now you have married him?"

Avice looked aside at the statuary as if the subtleties of her organization were not very easy to define.

"Was he that black-bearded typical local character I saw you walking with one Sun-

day? The same surname as mine; though, of course, you don't notice that in a place where there are only half a dozen surnames?"

"Yes, that was Ike. It was that evening we disagreed. He scolded me again, and I answered him, and the next day he went away."

"Well, as I say, I must consider what it will be best to do for you in this. The first thing, it seems to me, will be to get your husband home."

She impatiently shrugged her shoulders. "I don't like him!"

"Then why did you marry him?"

"I was obliged to, ^{according to the custom} after we'd proved each other." *after walking wi' eu.*

"You shouldn't have thought of such a thing. It is ridiculous, and out of date nowadays."

"Ah, he's so old-fashioned in his notions that he doesn't think like that. However, he's gone."

"Oh—it is only a tiff between you, I dare say. I'll start him in business if he'll come. . . . Is the cottage at home still in your hands?"

"Yes, it is my freehold. Gammcr Stock-wool is taking care o' it for me."

"Good. And back there you go straight-way, my pretty Madam, and wait till your husband comes to make it up with you."

"I won't go! I don't want him to come!" she sobbed. "I want to stay here, or anywhere, except where he can come!"

"You ^{idiot} will get over that. Now go back to the flat, there's a dear Avice, and be ready in one hour, waiting in the hall for me."

"I don't want to!"

"But I say you shall!"

She found it was no use to disobey. Precisely at the moment appointed he met her there himself, burdened only with a valise and umbrella, she with a box and other things. Directing the porter to put Avice and her belongings into a four-wheeled cab for the railway station, he walked out of the door, and kept looking behind till he saw the cab approaching. He then entered beside the astonished girl, and onward they went together.

They sat opposite each other in an empty compartment, and the tedious railway journey began. Regarding her closely now by the light of her revelation he wondered at himself for never divining her secret. Whenever he

looked at her the girl's eyes ^{filled with tears,} grew rebellious, and at last she wept ^{out right,}

"I don't want to go to him!" she sobbed, in a repressed voice.

Pierston was almost as much distressed as she. "Why did you put yourself and me in such a position?" he said, bitterly. "It is no use to regret it now! And I can't say that I do. It affords me a way out of a trying position. Even if you had not been married to him you would not have married me!"

"Yes, I would, Sir."

"What! You would? You said you wouldn't not long ago."

"I like you better now! I like you more and more!"

Pierston sighed, for emotionally he was not much older than she. That hitch in his development, rendering him the most lopsided of God's creatures, was his standing misfortune. A proposal to her which crossed his mind was dismissed as disloyalty, particularly to an inexperienced fellow-islander and one who was by race and traditions almost a kinswoman.

Little more passed between the twain on that wretched, never-to-be-forgotten day. Aphrodite, Ashtaroth, Freyja, or whoever the

love-queen of his isle might have been, was punishing him sharply, as she knew but too well how to punish her votaries when they reverted from the ephemeral to the stable mood. (When was it to end?) this curse of his heart not aging while his frame moved naturally onward? Perhaps only with life.

His first act the day after depositing her in her own house was to go to the chapel where, by her statement, the marriage had been solemnized, and make sure of the fact. Perhaps he felt an illogical hope that she might be free, even then, in the tarnished condition which such freedom would have involved. However, there stood the words distinctly: Isaac Pierston, Ann Avice Caro, son and daughter of So-and-so, married on such a day, signed by the contracting parties, the officiating minister, and the two witnesses.

Chap. XIII.

XIII

Finally
SHE IS ENSHROUDED FROM SIGHT

ONE evening in early winter, when the air was dry and gusty, the dark little lane which divided the grounds of ^{Sell - i - to - Rock} Sylvania Castle from the cottage of Avice, and led down to the adjoining ruin of Red King castle, was paced by a solitary man. The cottage was the centre of his beat; its western limit being the gates of the former residence, its eastern the draw-bridge of the ruin. The few other cottages thereabout — all as if carved from the solid rock — were in darkness, but from the upper window of Avice's tiny freehold glimmered a light. Its rays were repeated from the far-distant sea by the light-ship lying moored over the mysterious Shambles quicksand, which brought ~~carelessness~~ ^{carelessness} and domesticity into ^{the} position as balanced opposites.

The sea ~~moaned~~ ^{of hummed} — more than ~~moaned~~ ^{hummed} — among the boulders below the ruins, a ^{three} ~~three~~ ^{louder}

of its tide being timed to regular intervals. These sounds were accompanied by an equally periodic moan from the interior of the cottage chamber; so that the articulate heave of water and the articulate heave of life seemed but differing utterances of the self-same troubled terrestrial Being — which in one sense they were.

^{la} Pierston — for the man in the lane was he — would look from light-ship to cottage window; then back again, as he waited there between the travail of the sea without and the travail of the woman within. Soon an infant's wail of the very feeblest was also audible in the house. He started from his easy pacing and went again westward, standing at the elbow of the lane a long time. Then the peace of the sleeping village which lay that way was broken by light wheels and the trot of a horse. ^{la} Pierston went back to the cottage gate and awaited the arrival of the vehicle.

It was a light cart, and a man jumped down as it stopped. He was in a broad-brimmed hat, under which no more of him could be perceived than that he wore a black beard clipped like a ^{three} ~~yew~~ fence — a typical aspect in the island.

"You are Avice's husband?" asked the sculptor, quickly.

The man replied that he was, in the local accent. "I've just come in by ^{the last} to-day's boat," he added. "I couldn't ^{get} here avore. I had contracted for the job at Peter-Port, and had to see to't to the end."

"Well," said Pierston, "your coming means that you are willing to make it up with her?"

"Ay, I don't know but I be," said the man. "Mid so well do that as anything else!"

"If you do, thoroughly, a good business in your old line awaits you here in the island."

"Wi' all my heart, then," said the man. His voice was energetic, and, though slightly touchy, it showed, on the whole, a disposition to set things right.

The driver of the trap was paid off, and Jocelyn and Isaac Pierston—undoubtedly ^{scions} of a common stock in this isle of intermarriages, though they had no proof of it—entered the house. Nobody was in the ground-floor room, in the ^{away} centre of which stood a square table, in the ^{the} centre of the table a ^a little wool mat, and in the centre of the mat a lamp, the apartment having the appear

ance of being rigidly swept and set in order for an event of interest.

The woman who lived in the house with Avice now came down-stairs, and to the inquiry of the comers she replied that matters were progressing favorably, but that nobody could be allowed to go up-stairs just then. After placing chairs and viands for them she retreated, and they sat down, the ^{candle} lamp between them—the lover of the sufferer above, who had no right to her, and the man who had every right to her, but did not love her. Engaging in desultory and fragmentary conversation, they listened to the ^{trampling} of feet on the floor boards overhead—Pierston full of anxiety and attentiveness, Ike awaiting the course of nature calmly.

Soon they heard the feeble bleats repeated, and then the local practitioner descended and entered the room.

"How is she now?" said Pierston, the more taciturn Ike looking up with him for the answer that he felt would serve for two as well as for one.

"Doing well—remarkably well," replied the professional gentleman, with a manner of having said it in other places; and, his vehicle not

being at the door, he sat down and shared some refreshment with the others. When he had departed Mrs. Stockwool again stepped down and informed them that Ike's presence had been made known to his wife.

The truant quarrier seemed rather inclined to stay where he was and finish the mug of ale, but Pierston quickened him, and he ascended the staircase. As soon as the lower room was empty Pierston leaned with his elbows on the table and covered his face with his hands.

Ike was absent no great time. Descending with a proprietary mien that had been lacking before, he invited Jocelyn to ascend likewise, since she had stated that she would like to see him. Jocelyn went up the crooked old steps, the husband remaining below.

Avice, though white as the sheets, looked brighter and happier than he had expected to find her, and was apparently very much fortified by the pink little lump at her side. She held out her hand to him.

"I just wanted to tell 'ee," she said, striving against her feebleness, "I thought it would be no harm to see you, though 'tis rather soon—to tell 'ee how very much I thank you for get-

ting me settled again with Ike. He is very glad to come home again, too, he says. Yes, you've done a good many kind things for me, Sir."

Whether she were really glad, or whether the words were expressed as a matter of duty, Pierston did not attempt to learn.

He merely said that he valued her thanks. "Now, Avice," he added, tenderly, "I resign my guardianship of you. I hope to see your husband in a sound little business here in a very short time."

"I hope so—for baby's sake," she said, with a bright sigh. "Would you—like to see her, Sir?"

"The baby? Oh yes . . . your baby! You must christen her Avice."

"Yes—so I will!" she murmured, readily, and disclosed the infant with some timidity.

"I hope you forgive me, Sir, for concealing my thoughtless marriage!"

"If you forgive me for making love to you,"

"Yes. How were you to know! I wish—"

Pierston bade her good-bye, kissing her hand; turned from her and the incipient being, whom he was to meet again under very altered

conditions, and left the bedchamber with a tear in his eye.

"Here endeth that dream!" said he.

Hymen, in secret or overt guise, seemed to haunt Pierston just at this time with undignified mockery, which savored rather of Harlequin than of the torch-bearer. Two days after parting in a lone island from the girl he had so ~~disinterestedly~~ ^{disinterestedly} loved he met in Piccadilly his friend Somers, wonderfully spruced up and hastening along with a ~~preoccupied~~ ^{preoccupied} face.

"My dear fellow," said Somers, "what do you think! I was charged not to tell you, ^{yet} but, hang it! I may just as well make a clean breast of it now as later!"

"What—you are not going to . . ." began Pierston, with divination.

"Yes. What I said on impulse six months back I am about to carry out in cold blood. Nichola and I began in jest and ended in earnest. We are going to take one another next month for good and all."

PART THIRD

A YOUNG MAN TURNED SIXTY

A young man of fifty-five.

not in L.L.N.

*In me thou seest the glowing of such fire,
That on the ashes of his youth doth lie
As the death-bed whereon it must expire,
Consum'd with that which it was nourish'd by."*
—SHAKESPEARE

Chap. XXIII.

SHE RETURNS FOR THE NEW SEASON

^{newly} TWENTY years had spread their films over ^{closed} the events which wound up with the reunion of the second Avice and her husband, and the hoary peninsula called an island looked just the same as before; though many who had formerly projected their daily shadows upon its unrelieved summer whiteness ceased now to disturb the colorless sunlight there.

The general change, nevertheless, was small. The silent ships came and went from the wharf, the chisels clinked in the quarries; file after file of whity-brown horses, in strings of eight or ten, painfully dragged (down the hill) the square blocks of stone, on the antediluvian wooden wheels just as usual. The light-ship winked every night from the quicksands to the Beal Lantern, and the Beal Lantern glared through its eye-glass on the ship. The canine gnawing audible on the Pebble-bank had been

repeated ever since at each tide, but the pebbles remained undevoured.

Men drank, smoked, and spat in the inns with only a little ^{for degree, more} adulteration in their refreshments and a trifle less dialect in their speech than of yore. But ^{one} figure had never ^{been} seen on the Channel rock in the interval—the form of Pierston the sculptor, whose first use of the chisel that rock had instigated.

He had lived abroad a great deal, and, in fact, at this very date he was staying at a hotel in Rome. Though he had not once set eyes on Avice since parting from her in the room with her first-born, he had managed to obtain tidings of her from time to time during the interval. In this way Pierston learned that, shortly after their resumption of a common life in her house, Ike had ill-used ^{her till} fortunately, the business to which ^{lovelyn} had assisted him chancing to prosper, he became immersed in its details, and allowed Avice to pursue her ^{domestic} household courses without interference, initiating that kind of domestic reconciliation which is so calm and durable, having as its chief ingredient neither hate nor love, but ^{at} ^{all} embracing indifference.

At first Pierston had sent her sums of money privately, fearing lest her husband should deny her material comforts; but he soon found, to his great relief, that such help was unnecessary, social ambition, ^{prompting} Ike to set up as quite a gentleman-islander and to allow Avice a scope for show which he would never have allowed in mere kindness.

Being in Rome, as aforesaid, Pierston returned one evening to his hotel to dine, after spending the afternoon among the busts in the long gallery of the Vatican. The unconscious habit, common to so many people, of tracing likes in unlikes had often led him to discern, or to fancy he discerned, in the Roman atmosphere, in its lights and shades, and particularly in its reflected or secondary lights, something resembling the atmosphere of his

Insert 40

that here, in the Eternal City, there were quarries of ruins like the quarries of maiden rock at home. dinner at the common table, he was surprised to hear an American gentleman who sat opposite mention the name of Pierston's birth-

Insert 41.

who had been a fellow passenger with him in their voyage over. They were wondering whether she had been successful in her quest, which was some near relative who had lived in the before-mentioned isle, of which she was also a native.

~~insert many years before~~ ~~the time was~~
then a rich man, just retired from the business of a stone-merchant in England; but he had engaged in large speculations, and had lost nearly all his fortune. Jocelyn further gathered that the widowed daughter's name was Mrs. Leverre; that she had a stepson — her husband having been a Jersey gentleman, a widower — and that the stepson seemed to be a promising and interesting young man.

Pierston was instantly struck with the perception that these and other allusions, though general, were in accord with the history of his long-lost Marcia. He hardly felt any desire to hunt her up after nearly two-score years of separation, but he was impressed enough to resolve to exchange a word with the strangers as soon as he could get opportunity.

He could not well attract their attention through the plants upon the wide table, and, even if he had been able, he was disinclined to

226 ~~do so~~ ~~as public~~

was not admissible.

Insert 42.

whether they had seemed to go. On inquiry, P. found that they had gone out.

chance of overtaking them, but Pierston, waked to restlessness by their remarks, wandered up and down the adjoining Piazza di Spagna, thinking they might return. The streets below were immersed in shade, the front of the church at the top was flooded with orange light, the gloom of evening gradually intensifying upon the broad, long flight of steps, which foot-passengers incessantly ascended and

Insert 43.

for by going straight back home he could easily ascertain on the isle itself if his wife had indeed arrived there. It seemed impossible; what earthly woman, going off in a freak as his wife had done, would have kept silence so long, unless she had returned to dust; or, if indeed living, how should she bring herself to come back to him now?

Nevertheless, he felt it to be his duty to ascertain what truth might lie in this chance fancy; and

See page 228- third line from bottom for continuance.

Thus much Marcia. The other thread of his connection with the ancient Isle of Slingers was stirred by a letter he received from Avice a little after this date, in which she stated that her husband Ike had been killed in his own quarry by an accident within the past year; that she herself had been ill, and though well again, and left amply provided for, she would like to see him if he ever came that way.

As she had not communicated for several long years, her expressed wish to see him now was likely to be prompted by something more, something newer, than memories of him. Yet the manner of her writing precluded all suspicion that she was thinking of him as an old lover whose suit events had now made practicable. He told her he was sorry to hear that she had been ill, and that he would certainly take an early opportunity of going down to her home on his next visit to England.

He did more. Her request had revived thoughts of his old home and its associations, and instead of awaiting other reasons for a return he made her the operating one. About a week later he stood once again at the foot of the familiar steep whereon the houses at the

He pursued his inquiries as privately as possible, for his intention was to make himself known here no more. As he had ceased since his last residence here to wear his beard life were given, from which P. gathered that though the Avice who had once been his Avice was now a widow, she had friends and sympathizers about her which would render any attention on his part at this juncture unnecessary.

Here, as he stayed on, his local interests revived. Whenever he went out he could see

Insert 45.

The revived emotion detained him long and yet longer at this spot where he could see the island that was Avice's home,

as it skirted the island and revealed the cliffs far up its height the ruins of Red King's castle, behind which the little village of East Quarters lay.

Thus matters went on, if they did not rather stand still, for several days before Pierston deemed his vague promise to seek Avice out

Insert 46.

Even when he did go he was so afraid that he had intruded upon her too soon as to approach with unwonted diffidence. He need have shown no such concern.

do? She was always thinking of him and wishing to see him.

Her tone was anxious, and there was no doubt that she really had something to say which she did not wish to write. He wondered what it could be, and started the same afternoon.

Avice, who had been little in his mind of late years, began to renew for herself a distinct position therein. He was fully aware that since his earlier manhood a change had come over his regard of womankind. Once the individual had been nothing more to him than the temporary abiding-place of the typical or ideal: now his heart showed its bent to be a growing fidelity to the specimen, with all her pathetic flaws of detail; which, so far from sending him further, increased his tenderness. This maturer feeling, if finer and higher, was less convenient than the old ardors of passion could be felt as in youth without the recuperative intervals which had accompanied evanescence.

The first sensation was to find that she had long ceased to live in the little freehold cottage she had occupied of old. In answer to his inquiries he was directed along the road to the west of the modern castle, past the entrance on that side, and onward to the very house that had once been his own home. There it stood, as of yore, facing up the Channel, a comfortable roomy structure, the euonymus and other shrubs, which alone would stand in the teeth of the salt wind, living on

as he heard further rumors of the arrival
at least a month ago had the
his own father and returned
deemed his vague promise to seek Avice out
at least a month ago had the
his own father and returned
deemed his vague promise to seek Avice out

to tell
mental
indeed
though more
to the warmth
able & glorious
to the warmth

at about the same stature in front of it, but the paint-work much renewed. A thriving man had resided there of late, evidently.

The widow in mourning who received him in the front parlor was, alas! but the sorry shadow of Avice the Second. How could he have fancied otherwise after twenty years? Yet he had been led to fancy otherwise, almost without knowing it, by feeling himself unaltered. Indeed, curiously enough, nearly the first words she said to him were, "Why, you are just the same!"

"Just the same. Yes, I am, Avice," he answered, sadly; for this inability to ossify with the rest of his generation threw him out of proportion with the time. Moreover, while wearing the aspect of comedy, it was of the nature of tragedy.

"It is well to be you, Sir," she went on. "I have had troubles to take the bloom off me!"

"Yes; I have ^{heard of them.} been sorry for you."

She continued to regard him curiously, with humorous interest; and he knew what was passing in her mind: that this man, to whom she had formerly looked up as to a person far in advance of her along the lane of life, seemed

now to be a well-adjusted contemporary, the pair of them observing the world with fairly level eyes.

He had come to her with ^{love} warmth for a vision which, on reaching her, he found to have departed; and, though fairly weaned by the natural reality, he was so far ^{in her} staunch as to linger hankeringly. They talked of past days—his old attachment, which she had then despised, being now far more absorbing and present to her than to himself.

She unmistakably won upon him as he sat on. A curious closeness ^{to her} between them had been produced in his imagination by the discovery that she was passing her life within the house of his own childhood. Her similar surname meant little here; but it was also his, and, added to the identity of domicile, lent a strong suggestiveness to the accident.

"This is where I used to sit when my parents occupied the house," he said, placing himself beside that corner of the fireplace which commanded a view through the window. "I could see a bough of tamarisk wave outside at that time, and, beyond the bough, the same abrupt grassy waste towards the sea, and at night the same old light-ship blinking far out

there. Place yourself on the spot, to please me."

She set her chair where he indicated, and Pierston stood close beside her, directing her gaze to the familiar objects he had regarded thence as a boy. Her head and face—the latter thoughtful and worn enough, poor thing, to suggest a married life none too comfortable—were close to his breast, and with a few inches further incline would have touched it.

"And now you are the inhabitant, I the visitor," he said. "I am glad to see you here—so glad, Avice! You are fairly well provided for—I think I may assume that?" He looked round the room at the solid mahogany furniture and at the modern piano and show-bookcase.

"Yes, Ike left me comfortable. 'Twas he who thought of moving from my cottage to this larger house. He bought it, and I can live here as long as I choose to."

Apart from the decline of his adoration to friendship, there seemed to be a general convergence of positions which suggested that he might make amends for the original desertion by proposing to this Avice when a meet time should arrive. If he did not love her as he

had done when she was a slim thing catching mice in his rooms in London, he could surely be content at his age with comradeship. After all, she was only forty to his sixty. The feeling that he really could be thus content was so convincing that he almost believed the luxury of getting old and reposeful was coming to his restless, wandering heart at last.

"Well, you have come at last, sir," she went on: "and I am grateful to you. I did not like writing, and yet I wanted to be straightfor-

ward. I have never missed at all what I wished

Insert 47.

"Now, Avice", he began archly, "I feel, of course, your situation at present, and Heaven forbid I should say anything premature. But your life with your late husband has been such that I think it no harm to put an idea into your mind as regards the future, for you to turn over—not too seriously—just for what it is worth."

It originated, so far as it concerns me personally, with the sight of you in that cottage round the corner, nineteen or twenty years ago, when I became tenant of the castle opposite. But that was not the very beginning. The very beginning was a score of years

before that, when I, a young fellow of ^{thirteen} ~~one-and-twenty~~, coming home here from London to see my father, encountered a tender woman as like you as your double; was much attracted by her, as I saw her day after day flit past this window, till I made it my business to accompany her in her walks awhile. I, as you know, was not a stanch fellow, and it all ended badly. But, ~~at any rate, her daughter and I are~~ ^{she has never} friends."

"Ah, there she is!" suddenly exclaimed Avice, whose attention had wandered somewhat from his retrospective discourse. She was looking from the window towards the cliffs, where, upon the open ground quite near at hand, a slender female form was seen rambling along. "She is out for a walk," Avice continued. "I wonder if she is going to call here this afternoon? She is living at the castle opposite as governess."

"Oh, she's—"

"Yes. Her education was very thorough—better even than her grandmother's. I was the neglected one, and Isaac and myself both vowed that there should be no complaint on that score about her. We christened her Avice, to keep up the name, as you requested. I wish

you could speak to her; I am sure you would like her."

"Is that the baby?" faltered Jocelyn.

"Yes, the baby."

The person signified, now much nearer, was a still more modernized, up-to-date edition of the two Avices of that blood with whom he had been involved more or less for the last forty years. A ladylike creature was she—almost elegant. She was altogether finer in figure than her mother or grandmother had ever been, which made her more of a woman in appearance than in years. She wore a large-disked sun-hat, with a brim like a wheel whose spokes were radiating folds of muslin lining the brim, a black margin beyond the muslin being the fellow. Beneath this brim her hair was massed low upon her brow, the color of the thick tresses being obviously, from her complexion, repeated in the irises of her large, deep eyes. Her rather nervous lips were thin and closed, so that they only appeared as a delicate red line. A changeable temperament was shown by that mouth—quick transitions from affection to aversion, from a pout to a smile.

It was Avice the Third.

Jocelyn and the second Avice continued to gaze ardently at her.

"Ah, she is, not coming in now; she hasn't time," ^{said} murmured the mother, with some disappointment. "Perhaps She means to run across in the evening."

The tall girl, in fact, went past and on till she was out of sight. Pierston stood as in a dream. It was the very ^{she} ~~she~~, in all essential particulars, and with an ^{out the absence of a} intensification of ^{single} ~~general~~ charm, who had kissed him forty years before. When he turned his head from the window his eyes fell again upon the intermediate Avice at his side. Before but the relic of the Well-Beloved, she had now become its empty shrine. Warm friendship, indeed, he felt for her; but whatever that might have done towards the instauration of a former dream was now hopelessly barred by the rivalry of the thing itself in the guise of a lineal successor.

MISGIVINGS ON THE RE-EMBODIMENT

^{as} PIERSTON ^{who} had been about to leave, but he sat down again on being ^{of} asked if he would stay and have a cup of tea. He hardly knew for a moment what he did; a dim thought that Avice—the renewed Avice—might come into the house ^{after all} made his reseating himself an act of spontaneity.

He forgot that twenty years earlier he had called the now Mrs. Pierston an elf, a witch; and that lapse of time had probably not diminished the subtleties implied by those epithets. He did not know that she had noted every impression that her daughter had made upon him.

How he contrived to attenuate and disperse the ^{the subtle} rather tender personalities he had opened up with the new Avice's mother, Pierston never exactly ^{suens} defined. Perhaps she saw more than he thought she saw—read something in

his face—knew that about his nature which he gave her no credit for knowing. Anyhow, the conversation took the form of a friendly gossip from that minute, his remarks being often given while his mind was turned elsewhere.

Richardly a progression so that
 But a chill passed through Jocelyn when there had been time for reflection. The renewed study of his art in Rome, without any counterbalancing practical pursuit, had nourished and developed his natural responsiveness to impressions; he now felt that his old trouble, his doom—his curse, indeed, he had sometimes called it—was come back again. *Oh, how*
 His divinity was not yet propitiated for that original sin against her image in the person of Avice the First; and now, at the age of *one and* ~~one~~ and sixty, he was urged on and on like the Jew Ahasuerus—or, in the phrase of the islanders themselves, like a blind ram.

The Goddess, an abstraction to the general, was a *very* real personage to Pierston. He had watched the marble image of her which stood in his working-room, under all changes of light and shade—in the brightening of morning, in the blackening of eve, in moonlight, in lamplight; Every line and curve of her body none, naturally, knew better than

he; and, though not a belief, it was, as has been stated, a *fancy* formula, a superstition, that the three Avices were ~~interpenetrated~~ *interpenetrated* with her essence.

"And the next Avice—your daughter," he said, stumbingly; "she is, you say, a governess at the castle opposite?"

Mrs. Pierston reaffirmed the fact, adding that the girl often slept at home because she, *(the mother)* her mother, was so lonely. She often thought she would like to keep her daughter at home altogether.

"She plays that instrument, I suppose?" said Pierston, regarding the piano.

"Yes, she plays beautifully; she had the best instruction that masters could give her. She was educated at Sandbourne."

"Which room does she *play in* call hers when at home?" he asked, curiously.

"The little one over this."

It had been his own. "Strange," he murmured.

He finished tea, and sat after tea, but the youthful Avice did not arrive. With the Avice present he conversed as the old friend—no more. At last it grew dusk, and Pierston could not *find* find an excuse for staying longer.

"I hope to make the acquaintance — of your daughter," he said, in leaving, knowing that he might have added with ^{some} predestinate truth, "of my new tenderly beloved."

"I hope you will," she answered. ^{said Jocelyn.} "This evening she evidently has gone for a walk instead of coming here."

"And, by-the-bye, you have not told me what you especially wanted to see me for?"

"Ah, no. I will put it off."

"Very well. I don't pretend to guess."

"I must tell you another time."

"If it is any little business in connection with your late husband's affairs, do command me. I'll do anything I can."

"Thank you. And I shall see you again soon?"

"Certainly. Quite soon."

When he was gone she looked reflectively at the spot where he had been standing, and said: "Best hold my tongue. It will work of itself, without my telling."

he Jocelyn went from the house, but as the white road passed under his feet he felt in no mood to get back to his lodgings in the town on the mainland. He lingered about upon the undulating ground for a long while, think-

ing of the extraordinary reproduction of the original girl in this new form he had seen, and of himself as of a foolish dreamer in being so suddenly fascinated by the renewed image in a personality not one-third his age. As a physical fact, no doubt, the preservation of the likeness was no uncommon thing here, but it helped the dream.

Passing round the walls of the new castle, he deviated from his homeward track by turning down the familiar little lane which led to the ruined castle of the Red King. It took him past the cottage in which the new Avice was born, from whose precincts he had heard her first infantine cry. Pausing, he saw ^{at} the west, behind him, the new moon growing distinct upon the glow.

He was subject to gigantic ^{substitutions} fantasies still. In spite of himself, the sight of the new moon, ^{the known} as representing one who, by her so-called inconstancy, acted up to his own idea of a migratory Well-Beloved, made him ^{feel} as if his ^{with him in the flesh} wrath, in a changed sex, had suddenly looked over the horizon at him. In a crowd secretly, or in solitude boldly, he ^{often} bowed the knee three times to this ^{in the} sisterly divinity on her first appearance monthly, and directed a

Insert 48.
He feared Aphrodite, but Selene
he cherished. All this did he, a
man of fifty-nine!

from having spent itself yet.

In the other direction the castle ruins rose square and dusky against the sea. He went on towards these, around which he had played as a boy, and stood by the walls at the edge of the cliff pondering. There was no wind and but little tide, and he thought he could hear from years ago a voice that he knew. It certainly was a voice, but it came from the rocks beneath the castle ruin.

"Mrs. Atway!"

A silence followed, and nobody came. The voice spoke again: "John ~~Stoney~~ ^{Stoney}!"

Neither was this summons attended to. The cry continued, with more entreaty: "William Scribber!"

The voice was that of a Pierston—there could be no doubt of it—young Avicé's, surely. Something or other seemed to be detaining her down there against her will. A sloping path beneath the beetling cliff and the castle walls rising sheer from its summit led down to the lower level whence the voice proceeded. Pierston followed the pathway, and soon beheld a girl in light clothing—the same he had

seen through the window—standing upon one of the rocks, apparently unable to move. Pierston hastened across to her.

"Oh, thank you for coming!" she murmured, with some timidity. "I have met with an awkward mishap. I live near here, and am not frightened really. My foot has become jammed in a crevice of the rock, and I cannot get it out, try how I will. What shall I do?"

^{Pierston} ~~loclyn~~ stooped and examined the cause of discomfiture. "I think if you can take your boot off," he said, "your foot might slip out, leaving the boot behind."

She tried to act upon this advice, but could not do so effectually. Pierston then experimented by slipping his hand into the crevice till he could just reach the buttons of her boot, which, however, he could not unfasten any more than she. Taking his penknife from his pocket, he tried again, and cut off the buttons one by one. The boot unfastened, and out slipped the foot.

"Oh, how glad I am!" she cried, joyfully. "I was fearing I should have to stay here all night. How can I thank you enough?"

^{Pierston} He was tugging to withdraw the boot, but

no force that he could exercise would move it. At last she said: "Don't try any longer. It is not far to the house. I can walk in my stocking."

"I'll assist you in," he said *gallantly*.

She said she did not want help, nevertheless allowed him to help her on the unshod side. As they moved on she explained that she had come out through the garden door; had been standing on the boulders to look at something out at sea, just discernible in the evening light as assisted by the moon, and, in jumping down, had wedged her foot as he had found it.

Whatever Pierston's years might have made him look by day, in the dusk of evening he was fairly presentable as a pleasing man of no marked antiquity, his outline differing but little from what it had been when he was half his years. He was well preserved, still upright, trimly shaven, agile in movement; wore a tightly buttoned suit, which set off a naturally slight figure; in brief, he might have been of any age as he appeared to her at this moment. She talked to him with the coequality of one who assumed him to be not far ahead of her own generation; and, as the growing darkness obscured him more and more, he

adopted her assumption of his age with increasing boldness of tone.

The flippant, harmless freedom of the watering-place *hiss*, which Avice had plainly acquired during her sojourn at the Sandbourne school, helped Pierston greatly in this rôle of *jeune premier* which he was *not unready to play* *at any time*. Not a word did he say about being a native of the island; still more carefully did he conceal the fact of his having courted her grandmother and engaged himself to marry that attractive lady.

He found that she had come out upon the rocks through the same little private door from the lawn of the modern castle which had frequently afforded him egress to the same spot in years long past. Pierston accompanied her across the grounds almost to the entrance of the mansion—the place being now far better kept and planted than when he had rented it as a lonely tenant; almost, indeed, restored to the order and neatness which had characterized it when he was a boy.

Like her granny she was too inexperienced to be reserved, and during this little climb, leaning upon his arm, there was time for a great deal of confidence. When he had bidden

her farewell and she had entered, leaving him in the dark, a rush of sadness through Pierston's soul swept down all the temporary pleasure he had found in the charming girl's company. Had Mephistopheles sprung from the ground there and then with an offer to Jocelyn of restoration to youth on the usual terms of his firm, the sculptor ^{clearly} might have consented to sell a part of himself which he felt less immediate need of than of a ruddy lip and cheek and an unploughed brow.

But what could only have been treated as a folly by outsiders was almost a sorrow for him. Why was he born with such a temperament? And this concatenated interest could hardly have arisen, even with Pierston, but for a conflux of circumstances only possible here. The three Avices, the second ^{much} something like the first, the third ^{actually a double} a glorification of the first, at all events externally, were the outcome of the immemorial island customs of intermarriage and of prenuptial union, under which conditions the type of feature was almost uniform from parent to child through generations: so that, till quite latterly, to have seen one native man and woman was to have seen the whole population of that isolated rock, so nearly cut

off from the mainland. His own predisposition and the ^{consciousness} sense of his early faithlessness did all the rest.

He turned gloomily away, and let himself out of the precincts. Before walking along the couple of miles of road which would conduct him to the little station ^{at Slopeway} on the shore, he descended to the rocks whereon he had found her, and searched about for the fissure which had made a prisoner of this terribly belated edition of the Beloved. Kneeling down beside the spot, he inserted his hand, and ultimately, by much wriggling, withdrew the little boot. He ^{examined it thoughtfully by touch} ~~mused~~ over it for a moment, put it in his pocket, and followed the stony route to the Street of Wells. ^{rather than by sight.}

Slopeway here.

Mrs. Pierston was looking thoughtfully upon him. "Well, 'tis rather strange it should have been you, ^{Sr,}" she replied. "She seemed to be a good deal interested. I thought it might have been a younger man—a much younger man."

"It might have been, as far as feelings were concerned. . . . Now, Avice, I'll to the point at once. Virtually, I have known your daughter any number of years. When I talk to her I can anticipate every turn of her thought, every sentiment, every act, so long did I study those things in your mother and in you. Therefore, I do not require to learn her; she was learned by me in her previous existences. Now, don't be shocked; I am willing to marry her—I should be overjoyed to do it, if there would be nothing preposterous about it, or that would seem like a man making himself too much of a fool, and so degrading her in consenting. I can make her comparatively rich, as you know, and I would indulge her every whim. There is the idea, bluntly put. It would set right something in my mind that has been wrong for forty years. After my death she would have plenty of freedom and plenty of means to enjoy it."

THE RENEWED IMAGE BURNS ITSELF IN

Chap. XXV.
THERE was nothing to hinder Pierston in calling upon the new Avice's mother as often as he should choose, beyond the five miles of intervening railway and additional miles ^{or two} of clambering over the heights of the island. Two days later, therefore, ^{Pierston} he repeated his journey and knocked about tea-time at the widow's door.

As he had feared, the daughter was not at home. He sat down beside the old sweetheart who, having eclipsed her mother in past days, had now eclipsed herself in her child. Jocelyn produced the girl's boot from his pocket.

"Then, 'tis *you* who helped Avice out of her predicament?" said Mrs. Pierston, with surprise.

"Yes, my dear friend; and perhaps I shall ask you to help me out of mine before I have done. But never mind that now. What did she tell you about the adventure?"

Mrs. Isaac Pierston seemed only a little surprised; certainly not shocked.

"Well, if I didn't think you might be a bit taken with her!" she ^{assumed} said, with an arch simplicity which could hardly be called unaffected. "Knowing the set of your ^{own} mind, from my little time with you years ago, nothing you could do in this way would astonish me."

"But you don't think badly of me for it?"

"Not at all. . . By-the-bye, did you ever guess why I asked you to come? . . . But never mind it now; the matter is past. . . But course, it would depend upon what Avice felt. . . ^{she is} Perhaps she would rather marry a younger man."

"And suppose a satisfactory younger man should not appear?"

Mrs. Pierston showed in her face that she fully recognized the difference between a rich bird in hand and a ^{late} young bird in the bush. She looked him curiously up and down.

"I know you would make anybody a very nice husband," she said. "I know that you would be nicer than many men half your age; and, though there is a great deal of difference between you and her, there have been more

unequal marriages, that's true. Speaking as her mother, I can say that I shouldn't object to you, ^{Sir}, for her, provided she liked you. That is where the difficulty will lie."

"I wish you would help me to get over that difficulty," he said, gently. "Remember, I brought back a truant husband to you twenty years ago."

"Yes, you did," she assented, "and, though I may say no great things as to happiness came of it, I've always seen that your intentions towards me were none the less noble on that account. I would do for you what I would do for no other man, and there is one reason in particular which inclines me to help you with Avice—that I should feel absolutely certain I was helping her to a kind husband."

"Well, that would remain to be seen. I would, at any rate, try to be worthy of your opinion. Come, Avice, for old times' sake, you must help me. You never felt anything but friendship in those days, you know, and that makes it easy and proper for you to do me a good turn now."

After a little more conversation his old friend ^{had been to promise} promised that she really would do everything that lay in her power. She did.

not say how simple she thought him not to perceive that she had already, by writing to him, been doing everything that lay in her power; had created the feeling which prompted his entreaty. And ^{to show her good faith} in this promise, she asked him to wait till later in the evening, when Avice might possibly run across to see her.

Pierston, who fancied he had won the younger Avice's interest, at least, by the part he had played upon the rocks the week before, had a dread of encountering her in full light till he should have advanced a little further in her regard. He accordingly was perplexed at this proposal, and, seeing his hesitation, Mrs. Pierston suggested that they should walk together in the direction whence Avice would come, if she came at all.

He welcomed the idea, and in a few minutes they started, strolling along under the now strong moonlight, and when they reached the gates of ^{out in the Rock} Sylvania Castle turning back again towards the house. After two or three such walks up and down, the gate of the castle grounds clicked, and a form came forth which proved to be ^{Avice the younger.} the expected one.

As soon as they met, the girl recognized in

her mother's companion the gentleman who had helped her on the shore; and she seemed really glad to find that her chivalrous assistant was claimed by her parent as an old friend. She remembered hearing at ^{something} divers times about this worthy London man of talent and position, whose ancestry were people of her own isle, and possibly, from the name, of a common stock with her own.

"And you have actually lived in ^{the} Sylvania Castle yourself, Mr. Pierston?" asked Avice the daughter, ^{frankly} with her innocent young voice.

"Was it long ago?"

"Yes, it was some time ago," replied the sculptor, with a sinking at his heart lest she should say how long.

"It must have been when I was away—or when I was very little."

"I don't think you were away."

"But I don't think I could have been here?"

"No, perhaps you couldn't have been here."

"I think she was ^{remember} ~~hiding~~ ^{hiding} herself in the parley-bed," said Avice's mother, blandly.

They talked in this general way till they reached Mrs. Pierston's house; but Jocelyn resisted both the widow's invitation and the desire of his own heart, and went away with-

out entering. To risk, by visibly confronting her, the advantage that he had already gained, or fancied he had gained, with the reincarnate Avice required more courage than he could claim in his present mood.

No space in ILLA

Such evening promenades as these were frequent during the waxing of that summer moon. On one occasion, as they were all good walkers, it was arranged that they should meet half way between the island and the town in which Pierston had lodgings. It was impossible that by this time the pretty young governess should not have guessed the ultimate reason of these rambles to be a matrimonial intention; but she inclined to the belief that the widow, rather than herself, was the object of Pierston's regard; though why this educated and apparently wealthy man should be attracted by her mother—whose homeliness was apparent enough to the girl's more modern training—she could not comprehend.

They met accordingly in the middle of the Pebble-bank, Pierston coming from the mainland, and the women from the peninsula rock. Crossing the wooden bridge which connected the bank with the shore proper,

they moved in the direction of Henry the Eighth's Castle, on the verge of the ragstone cliff. Like the Red King's castle on the island, the interior was open to the sky, and when they entered and the full moon streamed down upon them over the edge of the enclosing masonry, the whole present reality faded from Jocelyn's mind under the press of memories. Neither of his companions guessed what Pierston was thinking of. It was in this very spot that he was to have met the grand-

Insert 49.

The consequences of that meeting would have been the old-fashioned betrothal or island custom-discontinued in these days— from which he could not have receded.

... years of severance from Avice, till a secondly renewed copy of his sweetheart had arisen to fill her place. But he, alas! was not renewed. And of all this the pretty young thing at his side knew nothing.

Taking advantage of the younger woman's retreat to view the sea through an opening of the walls, Pierston appealed to her mother in a whisper: "Have you ever given her a hint of what my meaning is? No? Then I

think you might, if you really have no objection."

Mrs. Pierston, as the widow, was far from being so coldly disposed in her own person towards her friend as in the days when he wanted to marry her. Had she now been the object of his ~~wishes~~ ^{kindness} he would not have needed to ask her twice. But like a good mother she stifled all this, and said she would sound Avice there and then.

"Avice, my dear," she said, ^{when the girl} ~~relieved from the window-gap~~ ^{returned from the window-gap} advancing to where the girl mused in the window-gap.

"what do you think of Mr. Pierston paying his addresses to you—~~coming~~ ^{being} courting, as I call it in my old-fashioned way? Supposing he were to, would you encourage him?"

"To me, mother?" said Avice, with an inquiring laugh. "I thought—he meant you!"

"Oh no, he doesn't mean me!" said her mother, hastily. "He is nothing more than my friend."

"I don't want any addresses," said the daughter.

"He is a man in society, and would take you to an elegant house in London, suited to your education, instead of leaving you to mope here."

"I should like that well enough," replied Avice, carelessly.

"Then give him some encouragement."

"I don't care enough about him to do any encouraging. It is his business, I should think, to do all."

She spoke in her lightest vein; but the result was that when Pierston, who had discreetly withdrawn, returned to them, she walked docilely, though perhaps gloomily, beside him, her mother dropping to the rear. They came to a rugged descent, and Pierston took her hand to help her. She allowed him to retain it when they arrived on level ground.

Altogether it was not an unsuccessful evening for the man with the unanchored heart, though possibly initial success meant worse for him in the long run than initial failure. There was nothing marvellous in the fact of her tractability thus far. In his modern dress and style, under the rays of the moon, he looked a very presentable gentleman indeed, while his knowledge of art and his travelled manners were not without their attractions for a girl who with one hand touched the educated middle class and with the other the rude and simple inhabitants of the isle. Her intensely

modern sympathies were quickened by her

Insert 50.

P. was almost ashamed of the brightness of his ardour for her.

created—which still permeated it, rendering it the tenderest, most anxious, most protective instinct he had ever known. It may have had in its composition too much of the boyish fervor that had characterized such affection when he was cherry-cheeked and ^{light} in the foot as a girl; but if it was all this feeling of youth, it was more.

Mrs. Pierston, in fearing to be frank lest she might seem to be angling for his fortune, did not fully divine his cheerful readiness to offer it, if by so doing he could make amends for his infidelity to her family forty years back in the past. Time had not made him mercenary and it had quenched his ambitions; and though his wish to wed Avice was not entirely a wish to enrich her, the knowledge that she would be enriched beyond anything that she could have anticipated was what allowed him to indulge his love.

He was not exactly old, he said to himself

the next morning as he ^{regarded} beheld his face in the glass. And he looked considerably younger than he was. But there was history in his face—distinct chapters of it; his brow was not that blank page it once had been. He knew the origin of that line in his forehead; it had been

traced in the course of a month or two ^{by a crisis in his} ~~troubled~~ troubles. He remembered the coming of this

pale wiry hair; it had been brought by the illness in Rome, when he had wished each night that he might never wake again. This wrinkled corner, that drawn bit of skin—they had resulted from those months of despondency when all seemed going against his art, his strength, his ^{love} happiness. "You cannot live your life and keep it, Jocelyn," he said. Time was against him and love, and time would probably win.

"When I went away from the first Avice," he continued, with whimsical misery, "I had a presentiment that I should ache for it some day. And I am aching—have ached ever since this jade of an ^{deal} ~~deal~~ learned the unconscionable trick of inhabiting one image only."

Upon the whole, he was not without a bode-
ment that it would be folly to press on.

skull and skeleton of life from their dear eyes. She was another illustration of the ~~rule~~ ^{fact} that succeeding generations of women are seldom marked by cumulative progress, ^{or even} their advance as girls being lost in their recession as ^{the} matrons; so that they move up and down the stream of intellectual development like flotsam in a tidal estuary. And this ^{is however,} perhaps not by reason of their faults as individuals, but of their misfortune as child-rearers.

The landscape-painter, now an Academician like Pierston himself—rather popular than distinguished—had given up that peculiar and personal taste in subjects which had marked him in times past, executing instead many pleasing aspects of nature addressed to the furnishing householder through the middling critic, and really very good of their kind. In this way he received many large checks from persons of wealth in England and America, out of which he built himself a sumptuous studio and an awkward house around it, and paid for the education of the growing maidens.

The vision of Somers's humble position as jackal to this lion of a family and house and studio and social reputation—Somers, to

No Heales A DASH FOR THE LAST INCARNATION *Byan M.*

THIS desultory courtship of a young girl which had been brought about by her mother's contrivance, was interrupted by the appearance of Somers and his wife and family on the Budmouth Esplanade. Alfred Somers, once the youthful, picturesque as his own paintings, was now a middle-aged family man with spectacles—spectacles worn, too, with the single object of seeing through them—and a row of daughters tailing off to infancy, who at present added appreciably to the income of the bathing-machine women established along the sands.

Mrs. Somers—once the intellectual, emancipated Mrs. Pine-Avon—had now retrograded to the petty and timid mental position of her mother and grandmother, ^{giving} sharp, strict regard to the ^{as class of society} current literature and art that reached the innocent presence of her long perspective of girls, with the view of hiding eye-

whom strange conceits and wild imaginings were departed joys never to return—led Pierston, as the painter's contemporary, to feel that he ought to be one of the by-gones likewise, and to put on an air of unromantic bufferism. He refrained from entering Avice's peninsula for the whole fortnight of Somers's stay in the neighboring town, although its gray poetical outline—"throned along the sea"—greeted his eyes every morn and eve across the roadstead.

When the painter and his family had gone back from their bathing holiday, he thought that he, too, would leave the neighborhood. To do so, however, without wishing at least the elder Avice good-bye would be unfriendly considering the extent of their acquaintance. One evening, ^{therefore} knowing this time of day to suit her best, he took the few minutes' ^{ride that} journey to the rock along the thin connecting string of junction, and arrived at Mrs. Pierston's door just after dark.

A light shone from an upper chamber. On asking for his widowed acquaintance he was informed that she was ill, seriously, though not dangerously. While learning that her daughter was with her, and further particu-

lars, and doubting if he should go in, a message was sent down to ask him to enter. His voice had been heard, and Mrs. Pierston would like to see him.

He could not with any humanity refuse, but there flashed across his mind the recollection that Avice the youngest had never yet really seen him, had seen nothing more of him than an outline, which might have appertained as easily to a man thirty years his junior as to himself, and a countenance so renovated by faint moonlight as to fairly correspond. It was with misgiving, therefore, that the sculptor ascended the staircase and entered the little upper sitting-room, now arranged as a sick-chamber.

Mrs. Pierston reclined on a sofa, her face emaciated to a surprising thinness for the comparatively short interval since her attack. "Come in, Sir," she said, as soon as she saw him, holding out her hand. "Don't let me frighten you."

Avice was seated beside her, reading. The girl jumped up, hardly seeming to recognize him. "Oh, it's Mr. Pierston!" she said, in a moment, adding quickly, with evident surprise and off her guard, "I thought Mr. Pierston was—"

by the little
road way
have

What she had thought he was did not pass her lips, and it remained a riddle for ^{Pierston} ~~her~~ until a new departure in her manner towards him showed that the words "much younger" would have accurately ended the sentence. Had Pierston not now confronted her anew, he might have endured philosophically her changed opinion of him. But he was seeing her again, and ^{his} ~~the~~ rooted feeling ^{was} ~~was~~ revived.

Pierston now learned for the first time that the widow had been visited by sudden attacks of this sort not infrequently of late years. They were said to be due to ^{some variety of} angina pectoris, the latter paroxysms having been the most severe. She was at the present moment out of pain, though weak, exhausted, and nervous. She would not, however, converse about herself, but took advantage of her daughter's absence from the room to broach the subject most in her thoughts.

No compunctions had stirred her as they had her visitor on the expediency of his suit in view of his years. Her fever of anxiety lest, after all, he should not come to see Avice again had been not without an effect upon her health; and it made her more candid than she had intended to be.

"Troubles and sickness ^{change our views} raise all sorts of fears, Mr. Pierston," she said. "What I felt ^{to me} ~~only~~ a wish for, when you first named it, I have hoped for a good deal since; and I have been so anxious that—that it should come to something! I am glad indeed that you are come."

"My wanting to marry Avice, you mean, dear Mrs. Pierston?"

"Yes—that's it. I wonder if you are still in the same mind? You are ^{sure} Then I wish something could be done—to make her agree to it—so as to get it settled. ^{I feel so anxious to} ~~I dread otherwise~~ what will become of her. She is not a practical girl, as I was—she would hardly like now ^{a.k.} to settle down as an islander's wife; and to leave her living here alone would trouble me."

"Nothing will happen to you yet, I hope, my dear old friend."

"Well, it is a risky complaint; and the attacks, when they come, are so agonizing that to endure them I ought to get rid of all outside anxieties, folk say. Now—do you want her, Sir?"

"With all my soul! But she doesn't want me."

"I don't think she is so against you as you

imagine. I fancy if it were put to her plainly, now I am in this state, it might be done."

From this subject They lapsed into conversation on the early days of their acquaintance, until Mrs. Pierston's daughter re-entered the room.

"Avice," said her mother, when the girl had been with them a few minutes. "About this matter that I have talked over with you so many times since my attack. Here is Mr. Pierston, and he wishes to be your husband. He is much older than you; but, in spite of it, that you will ever get a better husband I don't believe. Now, will you take him, seeing the state I am in, and how naturally anxious I am to see you settled before I die?"

"But you won't die, mother! You are getting better!"

"Just for the present only. Come, he is a good man and a clever man and a rich man. I want you, oh, so much! to be his wife. I can say no more."

Avice looked appealingly at the sculptor and then on the floor. "Does he really wish me to?" she asked, almost inaudibly, turning as she spoke to Pierston. "He has never quite said so to me."

"My dear one, how can you doubt it?" said

Pearson
Locelyn, quickly. "But I won't press you to marry me as a favor, against your feelings."

"I thought Mr. Pierston was younger!" she murmured to her mother.

"That counts for little when you think how much there is on the other side. Think of our position, and of his—a sculptor, with a mansion, and a studio full of busts and statues that I have dusted in my time, and of the beautiful studies you would be able to take up. Surely the life would just suit you? Your expensive education is wasted down here!"

Avice did not care to argue. She was outwardly gentle as her grandmother had been, and it seemed just a question with her of whether she must or must not. "Very well—I feel I ought to agree to marry him, since you tell me to," she answered, quietly, after some thought. "I see that it would be a wise thing to do, and that you wish it, and that Mr. Pierston really does—like me. So—so that—"

Pierston was not backward at this critical juncture, despite unpleasant sensations, *of his own selfishness.* But it was the historic ingredient in this genealogical passion—if its continuity through three generations may be so described—which appealed to his perseverance at the expense of

his wisdom. The mother was holding the daughter's hand; she took Pierston's, and laid Avice's in it.

No more was said in argument, and the thing was regarded as determined. Afterwards a noise was heard upon the window-panes, as of fine sand thrown; and, lifting the blind, Pierston saw that the distant light-ship winked with a bleared and indistinct eye. A drizzling rain had come on with the ^{night} dark, and it was striking the window in handfuls. He had intended to walk the two miles back to the station, but it meant a drenching to do it now. He waited and had supper; and, finding the weather no better, accepted Mrs. Pierston's invitation to stay over the night.

^{the room he occupied was} Thus it fell out that again he lodged in ^{the one} house he had been accustomed to live in as a boy, before his father had made his fortune, and before his own name had been heard of outside the boundaries of the isle.

He slept but little, and in the first movement of the dawn sat up in bed. Why should he ever live in London, or any other fashionable city, if this plan of marriage could be carried out? Surely, with this young wife, the island would be the best place for him. It

^{Bel - i - th - Rod} might be possible to rent Sylvania Castle as he had formerly done—better still, to buy it. If life could offer him anything worth having, it would be a home with Avice there on his native cliffs to the end of his days.

As he sat thus thinking, and ^{while the} daylight increased, he discerned, a short distance before him, a movement of something ghostly. His position was facing the window, and he found that by chance the looking-glass had swung itself vertical, so that what he saw was his own shape. The recognition startled him. The person he appeared ^{to be} was ^{by his own being} too grievously far chronologically, in advance of the person he felt himself to be. Pierston did not care to regard the figure ^{confronting} him so mockingly. Its voice seemed to say, "There's tragedy hanging on to this!" But the question of age being pertinent he could not give the ^{reply} spectre up, and ultimately got out of bed under the weird fascination of the reflection. Whether he had overwalked himself lately, or what he had done, he knew not; but never had he seemed so aged, by a score of years, as he was represented in the glass in that cold gray morning light. While his soul was what it was, why should he have been encumbered with

that withering carcass, without the ability to shift it off for another, as his ideal Beloved had so frequently done?

By reason of her mother's illness Avice was now living in the house, and, on going downstairs, he found that they were to breakfast *en tête-à-tête*. She was not then in the room, but she entered in the course of a few minutes. Pierston had already heard that the widow felt better this morning, and, elated by the prospect of sitting with Avice at this meal, he went forward to her joyously. As soon as she saw him in the full stroke of day from the window she started; and he then remembered that it was their first meeting under the solar rays.

She was so overcome that she turned and

Insert 51.

Indeed, so much was she affected that he thought she was going to faint. She had been sitting up the night before the last, she said, and was not quite so well as usual.

There may have been some truth in this;

Insert 52.

Avice soon grew friendly enough and seemed inclined to accept matters as they offered. Jocelyn, however, could not get over that first start she had.

See page 275, line 2, for continuance.

He determined that, at any cost to his heart, there should be no misapprehension about him from this moment.

"Miss Pierston," he said, as they sat down, "since it is well you should know all the truth before we go any further, that there may be no awkward discoveries afterwards, I am going to tell you something about myself—if you are not too distressed to hear it?"

"No—let me hear it."

"I was once the lover of your mother, and wanted to marry her; only she wouldn't, or rather couldn't, marry me."

"Oh, how strange!" said the girl, looking from him to the breakfast things, and from the breakfast things to him. "Mother has never told me that. Yet, of course, you might have been. I mean, you are old enough."

He took the remark as a satire she had not intended. "Oh yes—quite old enough," he said, grimly. "Almost too old."

"Too old for mother? How's that?"

"Because I belonged to your grandmother."

"No! How can that be?"

"I was her lover likewise. I should have married her if I had gone straight on instead of round the corner."

THE WELL-BELOVED

desert us now—my heart is so set on my child's welfare?"

Back I go i' regular, maw
"Desert you I won't," said Jocelyn. "It is too much like the original case. But I must let her desert me."

On his return, with no other object than that of wishing Mrs. Pierston good-bye, he found her painfully agitated. She clasped his hand and wetted it with her tears.

"Oh, don't be offended with her!" she cried. "She's young. We are one people—don't marry a kimberlin! It will break my heart if you forsake her now! Avise!"

The girl came. "My manner was hasty and thoughtless this morning," she said, in a low voice. "Please pardon me. I wish to abide by my promise."

Her mother, still tearful, again joined their hands; and the engagement stood as before.

Pierston went back to Budmouth, but dimly seeing how curiously, through his being a rich suitor, ideas of beneficence and reparation were retaining him in the course arranged by her mother, and urged by his own desire in the face of his understanding.

Chapters V and VI of
The Well-Beloved
contain comparatively few passages
identical with those in the IIN
The Pursuit of the Well-Beloved.

Chapters VII and VIII
contain no identical or
similar passages.

A list of Chapter Titles
as given in IIN is as follows:

- Chap. XXVII
He Desperately Clutches the Form.
- Chap. XXVIII
He Possesses It; He Possesses It Not.
- Chap. XXIX.
The Elusiveness Continues.
- Chap. XXX.
He Becomes Retrogressive.
- Chap. XXXI
The Magnanimous Thing.
- Chap. XXXII
The Pursuit Abandoned.
- Chap. XXXIII
He Becomes Aware of New Conditions.

Summaries of these chapters are
given, and explanatory inserts
are made when necessary in Chapters
V and VI.

whom they really liked. ^{The husband and} Pierston and ^{his} guests, almost equally inexperienced—~~for~~ the sculptor had nearly forgotten what knowledge of householding he had acquired earlier in life—could consider and practise thoroughly a species of skeleton-drill in receiving visitors when the pair should announce themselves as married and at home in the coming winter season.

Avice was charming, even if a little cold. He congratulated himself yet ^{was that she} again that time ^{people congratulated him.} should have reserved for him this final chance for one of the line. She was somewhat like her mother, whom he had loved in the flesh, but she ^{had the way of} had the soul of her grandmother, whom he had loved in the spirit—and, for that matter, loved now. Only one criticism had he to pass upon his ^{judicial partner} choice: though in outward semblance her grandam's idealized she had not the first Avice's candor, ^{of heart} but rather her mother's closeness. He never knew exactly what she was thinking and feeling. Yet he seemed to have such prescriptive rights in women of her blood that her occasional want of confidence did not deeply trouble him.

It was one of those ripe and mellow afternoons that sometimes color London with their

golden light at this time of the year, and produce those marvellous sunset effects which, if they were not known to be made up of kitchen coal-smoke and animal exhalations, would be rapturously applauded. Behind the perpendicular, oblique, zigzagged, and curved zinc, ^{which called} tall boys ^{and} that formed a gray pattern not unlike early Gothic numerals against the sky, the men and women on tops of omnibuses saw an irradiation of topaz hues, darkened here and there into richest russet.

^{and the same light managed to creep} There had been a sharp shower during the afternoon, and Pierston—who had to take care of himself—had worn a pair of galoshes on his short walk in the street. He noiselessly entered the studio, inside which some gleams of the same mellow light had managed to creep, and where he guessed he should find his prospective wife and mother-in-law awaiting him with tea. ^{There was no one} But only Avice was there, seated beside the teapot of brown delf, which, as artists, they affected, her back being towards him. She was holding her handkerchief to her eyes, and ^{he} saw that she was weeping silently.

In another moment he perceived that she was weeping over a book. By this time she

had heard him, and came forward. He made it appear that he had not noticed her distress, and they discussed some arrangements of furniture. When he had taken a cup of tea, she went away, leaving the book behind her.

Pierston took it up. The volume was an old school-book—Stièvenard's *Lectures Françaises*—with her name in it as a pupil at Sandbourne High-school, and date-markings denoting lessons taken at a comparatively recent time, for Avice had been but a novice as governess when he discovered her.

For a school-girl—which she virtually was—to weep over a school-book was strange. Could she have been affected by some subject in the readings? Impossible. Pierston fell to thinking, and ~~zest died~~ ^{the bloom went off} for the process of furnishing, which he had undertaken so gaily. Somehow, the bloom was again disappearing from his approaching marriage. Yet he loved Avice more and more tenderly; he feared sometimes that in the solicitousness of his affection he was spoiling her by indulging her every whim.

He looked round the large and ambitious apartment, now becoming clouded with shades, out of which the white and cadaverous count-

tenances of his studies, casts, and other lumber peered meditatively at him, as if they were saying, "What are you going to do now, old boy?" They had never looked like that while standing in his past homely workshop, where all the real labors of his life had been carried out. What should a man of his age, who had not for years done anything to speak of—certainly not to add to his reputation as an artist—want with a new place like this? It was all because of the elect lady, and she apparently did not want him.

Pierston did not observe anything further in Avice to cause him ~~to wait~~ ^{to wait} till one dinner-time, a week later, towards the end of the visit. Then, as he sat himself ~~between~~ ^{beside} her and her mother at their limited table, he was struck with her nervousness, and was tempted to say, "Why are you troubled, my little dearest?" in tones which disclosed that he was as troubled as she.

"Am I troubled?" she said, with a start, turning her gentle hazel eyes upon him.

"Yes, I suppose I am. It is because I have received a letter—from an old friend." ^{from who used to be}

"You didn't show it to me," said her mother ^{friendly}.

"No—I tore it up."

Insert 55.

Summary of Chapter XXVIII

He Possesses It: He Possesses It Not.

At just before midnight P. hears a gasping sound from Avice as she sleeps. He enters the room. She wakes and regards him with dread. He sits for a time in silence. Suddenly, seeing she is awake, he determines to tell her of his relations with her family. He does so. She is surprised and pained, and he realizes that his cause is lost.

He decides to take her back to the island for a few weeks to try to shake off the effect which London had seemed to have upon her, and to see her mother who is not well. She is glad to go.

At Budmouth P. stops for the night, but sends Avice on. The next morning he continues his journey on foot, and considers the situation seriously. Has he a right to Avice when she does not love him? A legal right surely, but is not that all?

(In these queries with himself, there is a hint of portions in Jude the Obscure)

Upon his arrival at the island, Avice tells him that her mother is worse. He finds her evidently sinking. He does not remain with Avice III, but takes lodgings near by.

Summary of Chapter XXIX

Insert 56.

The Elusiveness Continues.

The mother dies and is buried in the old churchyard. P. leaves Avice in her mother's house, which they decide to take as a country residence, and returns to London.

" A feeling which many people might have called Quixotic was acquiring such strength in him as to make future relations with his charming prize a perplexing problem to a man whose pursuits had taught him to regard impressions and sentiments as more cogent than legal rights, and humours as more cogent than reasons." (Quoted directly from ILL.)

A month later he goes back to the island. He misses the last train at nine P.M. and determines to walk from the seaport to the island village. About half-way he comes upon a man sitting upon the bank. The man answers in a faint and shaken voice, and a foreign accent. P. says: "alts."

(See insert 57, p. 285.)

As P. draws near the house, he sees Avice, presumably awaiting him in the doorway. He has supper. A. then tells him she must go and see somebody who is ill. He gives her permission (see p. 285) and she goes.

She is gone so long that he starts in search of her. He walks a while; then, finding a forked road and feeling uncertain as to which way she will come, he sits under some trees by a wall and waits. Soon he hears voices, and recognizes the young man whom he has asked for, and Avice ! He follows them. They rest at the corner of the Red King's inn, and P. hears their conversation. Avice is upbraiding the young man, whose name is Henri, for having returned. He says he will go back the next day and never trouble her further if it is her command.

"It is- it must be", she says.

They part, but not until the young man has reproved her, and she has said that she could not have married him on account of her mother.

intended to halt a couple of hours in the neighboring seaport to give some orders relating to the wedding, but the little railway train being in waiting to take him on, he proceeded with a natural impatience, resolving to do his business here by messenger from the isle.

He passed the ruins of the Tudor castle and the long, featureless rib of grinding pebbles that screened off the outer sea, which could be heard lifting and dipping rhythmically in the wide vagueness of the Bay. At the slender-hill island townlet of the Wells there arose no fly, and, leaving his things to be brought on, as he often did, he climbed the eminence on foot.

Half-way up the steepest part of the pass he saw in the dusk a figure pausing—the single person on the incline. Though it was too dark to identify faces, Pierston gathered from the way in which the halting stranger was supporting himself by the hand-rail, which here bordered the road to assist climbers, that the person was exhausted.

"Anything the matter?" he said.

"Oh no—not much," was returned by the other.

"But it is steep just here."

The accent was not quite that of an Eng-

Insert 87.

The conversation in ILM, though quite different in wording, is essentially the same in meaning. However, mention of a hemorrhage and its effect which is given in ILM is lacking here. Also, ILM bears no hint that the young man did not care for P's company.

It turned out to be rather low muck for me, as there is some weakness left still, and this stiff incline brought it out."

"Naturally. You'd better take hold of my arm—at any rate, to the lower here."

Thus pressed, the stranger did so, and they went on towards the ridge, till, reaching the lime-kills standing there, the stranger abandoned his hold, saying, "Thank you for your assistance, sir. Good-night."

"I don't think I recognize your voice as a native's?"

"No, it is not. I am a Jersey man. Good-night, sir."

"Good-night, if you are sure you can get on. Here, take this stick—it is no use to me." Saying which, Pierston put his walking-stick into the young man's hand.

"Thank you again. I shall be quite re-

1/24/11
2/14/11
1/24/11

covered when I have rested a minute or two. Don't let me detain you, please."

The stranger, as he spoke, turned his face towards the south, where the Beal light had just come into view, and stood regarding it with an obstinate fixity. As he evidently wished to be left to himself, Jocelyn went on and troubled no more about him, though the desire of the young man to be rid of his company, after accepting his walking-stick and his arm, had come with a suddenness that was almost emotional; and impressionable as Jocelyn was, no less now than in youth, he was saddened for a minute by the sense that there were people in the world who did not like even his sympathy.

However, a pleasure which obliterated all this arose when Pierston drew near to the

Insert 58.

It was a pleasure indeed to P. when, drawing near to the house which was now again his own dear home, he beheld a little figure standing against the door, and presumably awaiting him. (See insert 56, - paragraph 4.) Avice, for it was she, dutifully allowed him to kiss her when he reached her side. though her nervousness, only too apparent, was that of a child toward a parent who may prove stern.

figure standing against the light of the open door and presumably awaiting him.

Avice, who it was, gave a little jump when she recognized him, but dutifully allowed him to kiss her when he reached her side; though her nervousness was only too apparent, and was like a child's towards a parent who may prove stern.

"How dear of you to guess that I might come on at once instead of later!" says Jocelyn. "Well, if I had stayed in the town to go to the shops, and so on, I could not have got here till the last train. How is mother—our mother, as I shall call her soon?"

Avice said that her mother had not been so well, she feared not nearly so well, since her return from London, so that she was obliged to keep her room. The visit had perhaps been too much for her. "But she will not acknowledge that she is much weaker, because she will not disturb my happiness."

Jocelyn was in a mood to let trifles of manner pass, and he took no notice of the effort which had accompanied the last word. They went up-stairs to Mrs. Pierston, whose obvious relief and thankfulness at sight of him were grateful to her visitor.

"I am so, oh, so glad you are come!" said, huskily, as she held out her thin hand and stifled a sob. "I have been so—"

She could get no further for a moment, and Avice turned away weeping, and abruptly left the room.

"I have so set my heart on this," Mrs. Pierston went on, "that I have not been able to sleep of late, for I have feared I might drop off suddenly before she is yours, and lose the comfort of seeing you actually united. Your being so kind to me in old times has made me so sure that she will find a good husband, you that I am over-anxious, I know. Indeed, I have not liked to let her know quite how anxious I am."

Thus they talked till Jocelyn bade her good-night, it being noticeable that Mrs. Pierston, chastened by her illness, maintained no longer any reserve on her gladness to acquire him as her son-in-law; and her feelings destroyed any remaining scruples he might have had from perceiving that Avice's consent was rather an obedience than a desire. As he went down-stairs, and found Avice awaiting his descent, he wondered if anything had occurred here during his absence to give Mrs.

Pierston new uneasiness about the marriage, but it was an inquiry he could not address to a girl whose actions could alone be the cause of such uneasiness.

He looked round for her as he supped, but though she had come into the room with him she was not there now. He remembered her telling him that she had had supper with her mother, and Jocelyn sat on quietly musing and sipping his wine for something near half an hour. Wondering then, for the first time, what had become of her, he rose ^{suddenly} and went to the door. Avice was quite near him, after all—only standing at the front door, as she had been doing when he came looking into the light of the full moon which had risen since his arrival. His sudden opening of the dining-room door seemed to agitate her.

"What is it, dear?" he asked.

"As mother is much better and doesn't want me, I ought to go and see somebody I promised to take a parcel to—I feel I ought to go."

And yet, as you have just come to see me—I suppose you don't approve of my going out while you are here?"

"Who is the person?"

"Somebody down that way," she said, in-

definitely. ^{It is not very far to the house} It is not very far off. I am not afraid — I go out often by myself at night hereabout."

He reassured her good-humoredly. "If you really wish to go, my dear, of course I don't object. I have no authority to do that ~~to~~ to-morrow, and you know that if I had it I shouldn't use it."

"Oh, but you have! Mother being an invalid, you are in her place, apart from — to-morrow."

"Nonsense, darling. Run across to your friend's house by all means if you want to."

"And you'll be here when I come in?"

"No, I am going down to the inn to see if my things are brought up."

"But hasn't mother asked you to stay here? The spare room was got ready for you. . . . Dear me, I am afraid I ought to have told you!"

"She did ask me. But I have some things coming, directed to the inn, and I had better be there. So I'll wish you good-night, though it is not late. I will come in quite early to-morrow, to inquire how your mother is going on and to wish you good-morning. You will be back again quickly this evening?"

"Oh yes."

"And I needn't go with you for company?"

"Oh no, thank you. It is no distance."

Pierston then departed, thinking how entirely her manner was that of one to whom a question of doing anything was a question of permission and not of judgment. He had no sooner gone than Avice took a parcel from a cupboard, put on her hat and cloak, and following by the way he had taken till she reached the entrance to Sylvania Castle, there stood still. She could hear Pierston's footsteps passing down East Quarriers to the inn; but she went no farther in that direction. Turning into the lane on the right, of which mention has so often been made, she went quickly past the last cottage, and, having entered the gorge beyond, she clambered into the ruin of the Red King's or Bow-and-Arrow Castle, standing as a square black mass against the moonlit, indefinite sea.

Summary of
Chapter XXX.

He Becomes Retrogressive.

P. reaches home first. Avice comes in.

"Where have you been so long, Avice?" sternly asked the man of nine and fifty.*

"I will tell you", said Sweet-and-Twenty with breathless humility.

She tells him her story frankly. Her lover of two years ago has come to the island to claim her, having found that her name is still Pearston and thinking her unmarried. She went out to tell him the truth, found him ill, and wished to help him.

P. promises a doctor on the morrow, and asks how he first knew this young man. She tells him.

(See story in book- p.295-6-7)
She says she wished to marry him, but her mother had set her heart on her marriage with P. She begs P's forgiveness, and says Henri will leave the island tomorrow, and she will never hear from him again.

P. is touched by her frankness and honor. He tells her that she may care for Henri, and that he shall have every attention.

P. goes to see Henri. They talk matters over frankly. P. promises he (Henri) shall see Avice on the morrow, and Henri promises he will never trouble them again when he is well.

P. returns home troubled. He has an honest wish to right this matter, but does not know how to annul his marriage with Avice.

* Listed - 14V.

Summary of
Chapter XXXI.

The Magnanimous Thing.

The next morning P. and A. go to see Henri at the inn. H. and A. are disconcerted at first. The doctor has pronounced H's malady a hemorrhage of the stomach, which is nothing serious.

The conversation is impersonal. P. begins to be much interested in H. That afternoon he secures more quiet lodgings for him.

A. begins to look "wan and leaden-eyed". P. "ponders a scheme". He realizes that the situation between him and Avice is a most improper one- however licensed it may be by "fees, stamps, and ceremonies". He sees that A. will never be weaned from H. by surfeit of him.

P's scheme is "based on the idea of resuscitating his first wife in spirit and seeming", since he has never received definite tidings of her death. Though he has never received legal testimony of her decease, he has no doubt of it in his own mind. "Since his marriage with Avice was a farce, why not treat it as a farce by playing another to match it?"

He tells A. at breakfast that he has reason to believe Marcia is alive; that if so, he can have no claim upon A.; that he going to the States to search for Marcia; and that he will send her (Avice) directions what to do. When she finds she is no wife of his, she is to marry Henri. He sends her to tell Henri. When she returns, he is leaving for a few days in London.

Insert 61.

Summary of
Chapter XXXII .

The Pursuit Abandoned.

After twenty days P. returns from London, and calls upon Henri. To H.'s frankly-expressed joy, P. assures him that he has almost indubitable proof that Avice will soon be free. He tells H. that a fortune has been settled upon A. and any possible children. P. tells H. to set about marriage preparations at once.

That night P. writes to Somers, who is the only old friend he has in the world. He tells briefly the whole story, and then announces his intention of disappearance after assuming the belief that M. still lives, which will free Avice. He tells Somers, will find on the other side of the Atlantic some simple, old house-keeper, whom he will call Marcia so that no questions will arise if his existence shall ever become known again on the isle. He posts the letter, and goes to bed.

Lying there alone, he begins to wonder if he cares for the additional score of years which may come to him. He decides he does not. At two he rises and dresses. Then he again writes to Somers.

He tells him he lacks desire "to carry through an ingenious device for human happiness". He says in closing

"I abandon it for a better and a grander one (scheme)- one more worthy of my age, my outlook, and my opportunities. What that is, you will know in a few hours."

He leaves money for his bills, and leaves the house. He reaches A's house but is only strengthened in his determination by his memory of her. He goes back the way he has come, climbs down the cliffs near the old castle to the shore. He here finds a few skiffs, one of which he pushes down the beach. He floats it, and jumps in without an oar.

See p. 307-308.

His boat is caught in the current. he lies down in the bottom, and waits for death while the boat is

carried toward the Race.

Suddenly he is thrown against some hard body, striking his head. Then he hears voices, finds himself in the water, feels himself being hauled up, and at least knows no more.

17 Jan 1921
Summary of
Chapter XXXIII.

He Becomes Aware of New Conditions.

P. is taken ashore, and is ill for a long time. When he comes to consciousness, he hears strangely familiar tones from his nurse. Finally he recognizes the voice of his wife Marcia. He is kept in a darkened room and cannot see her, but he pictures her as queenly as of old.

At last the doctor allows light. Then he sees her- no longer a "Juno" but a "Witch of Endor". She tells him she has seen his advertisements, and thinks they may as well make their "final bows and exits" together.

A telegram arrives announcing that the marriage between Pearston and Avice Pearston is nullified.

Marcia passes by a photograph of Avice, and P. contrasts them. Then he begins to laugh hysterically.

"I-I- it is too, too, droll- this ending to my would-be romantic history !Ho-ho-ho !" *

* Last sentence of the IIN serial.

But I should say there wadden much between 'em."

"I don't think there was. But I've a sort of conviction that she saw him last night. I believe it was only to bid him good-bye and return him some books he had given her; but I wish she had never known him; he is rather an excitable, impulsive young man, and he might make mischief. He isn't a Frenchman though he has lived in France. His father was a Jersey gentleman, and on his becoming a widower he married as his second wife a native of this very island. That's mainly why the young man is so at home in these parts."

"Ah—now I follow 'ee. She was a French comb—his stepmother; I heard something about her years ago."

"Yes; her father had the biggest stone-trade on the island at one time; but the name is forgotten here now. He retired years before I was born. However, mother used to tell me that she was a handsome young woman, who tried to catch Mr. Pierston when he was a young man, and scandalized herself a bit with him. She went off abroad with her father, who had made a fortune here; but when he got over there he lost it nearly all

some way. Years after she married this Jersey man, Mr. Leverre, who had been fond of her as a girl, and she brought up his child as her own."

Mrs. Pierston paused, but as Ruth did not ask any question she presently resumed her self-relieving murmur:

"How Miss Avice got to know the young man was in this way: When Mrs. Leverre's husband died she came from Jersey to live at Sandbourne, and made it her business one day to cross over to this place to make inquiries about Mr. Jocelyn Pierston. As my name was Pierston, she called upon me with her son, and so Avice and he got acquainted. When she went back to Sandbourne to the finishing-school they kept up the acquaintance in secret. He taught French somewhere there, and does still, I believe."

"Well, I hope she'll forget en. He idden good enough."

"I hope so—I hope so. . . . Now, I'll try to get a little nap."

Ruth Stockwool went back to her room, where, finding it would not be necessary to get up for another hour, she lay down again and soon slept. Her bed was close to the

staircase, from which it was divided by a lath partition only, and her consciousness either was or seemed to be aroused by light brushing touches on the outside of the partition, or of fingers feeling the way down-stairs in the dark. The slight noise passed, and in a few seconds she dreamed, or fancied she could hear, the unfastening of the back door.

She had nearly sunk into another sleep when precisely the same phenomena were repeated — fingers brushing along the wall close to her head, down, downward, the soft opening of the door, its close, and silence again.

She now became clearly awake. The repetition of the process had made the whole matter a singular one. Early as it was, the faint sounds might have been those of the housemaid descending, though why she should have come down so stealthily and in the dark did not make itself clear. But the second performance was inexplicable. Ruth got out of bed and lifted her blind. The dawn was hardly yet pink, and the light from the same bank was not yet extinguished. But the bushes of euonymus against the white palings of the front garden could be seen, also the

light surface of the road winding away like a ribbon to the north entrance of Sylvania Castle, thence round to the village, the cliffs, and the cove behind. Upon the road two dark figures could just be discerned, one a little way behind the other, but overtaking and joining the foremost as Ruth looked. After all, they might be quarriers or lighthouse-keepers from the south of the island, or fishermen just landed from a night's work. There being nothing to connect them with the noises she had heard indoors, she dismissed the whole subject, and went to bed again.

Jocelyn had promised to pay an early visit to ascertain the state of Mrs. Pierston's health after her night's rest, her precarious condition being more obvious to him than to Avice and making him a little anxious. Subsequent events caused him to remember that while he was dressing he casually observed two or three boatmen standing near the cliff beyond the village, and apparently watching with deep interest what seemed to be a boat far away towards the opposite shore of South Wesson. At half-past eight he came from the door of the inn and went straight to Mrs. Pierston's.

On approaching, he discovered that a strange expression which seemed to hang about the house-front that morning was more than a fancy, the gate, door, and two windows being open, though the blinds of other windows were not drawn up, the whole lending a vacant, dazed look to the domicile, as of a person gaping in sudden stupefaction. Nobody answered his knock, and walking into the dining-room he found that no breakfast had been laid. His flashing thought was, "Mrs. Pierston is dead."

While standing in the room somebody came down-stairs, and Jocelyn encountered Ruth Stockwool, an open letter fluttering in her hand.

"Oh, Mr. Pierston, Mr. Pierston! The Lord-a-Lord!"

"What? Mrs. Pierston—"

"No, no! Miss Avice! She is gone!—yes—gone! Read ye this, sir. It was left in her bedroom, and we be fairly galled out of our senses!"

He took the letter and confusedly beheld that it was in two handwritings, the first section being in Avice's:

"MY DEAR MOTHER.—How ever will you forgive me for what I have done! So deceitful as it seems.

And yet till this night I had no idea of deceiving either you or Mr. Pierston.

"Last night at ten o'clock I went out, as you may have guessed, to see Mr. Leverre for the last time, and to give him back his books, letters, and little presents to me. I went only a few steps—to Bow-and-Arrow Castle, where we met, as we had agreed to do, since he could not call. When I reached the place I found him there waiting, but quite ill. He had been unwell at his mother's house for some days, and had been obliged to stay in bed, but he had got up on purpose to come and bid me good-bye. The over-exertion of the journey upset him, and though we stayed and stayed till twelve o'clock, he felt quite unable to go back home—unable, indeed, to move more than a few yards. I had tried so hard not to love him any longer, but I loved him so now that I could not desert him and leave him out there to catch his death. So I helped him—nearly carrying him—on and on to our door, and then round to the back. Here he got a little better, and as he could not stay there, and everybody was now asleep, I helped him up-stairs into the room we had prepared for Mr. Pierston if he should have wanted one. I got him into bed, and then fetched some brandy and a little of your tonic. Did you see me come into your room for it, or were you asleep?"

"I sat by him all night. He improved slowly, and we talked over what we had better do. I felt that, though I had intended to give him up, I could not now becomingly marry any other man, and that I

ought to marry him. We decided to do it at once before anybody could hinder us. So we came down before it was light, and have gone away to get the ceremony solemnized.

"Tell Mr. Pierston it was not premeditated, but the result of an accident. I am sincerely sorry to have treated him with what he will think unfairness, though I did not love him I meant to obey you and marry him. But God sent this necessity of my having to give shelter to my love, to prevent, I think, my doing what I am now convinced would have been wrong."

"Ever your loving daughter, AVICK"

The second was in a man's hand:

"DEAR MOTHER (as you will soon be to me),—AVICK has clearly explained above how it happened though I have not been able to give her up to Mr. Pierston. I think I should have died if I had not accepted the hospitality of a room in your house this night and your daughter's tender nursing through the dark, dreary hours. We love each other beyond expression, and it is obvious that, if we are human, we cannot resist marrying now, in spite of friends' wishes. Will you please send the note lying beside this to my mother? It is merely to explain what I have done."

"Yours, with warmest regard,

"HENRI LEVERRE"

Jocelyn turned away and looked out of the window.

"Mrs. Pierston thought she heard some talking in the night, but of course she put it down to fancy. And she remembers Miss Avick coming into her room at one o'clock in the morning, and going to the table where the medicine was standing. A sly girl—all the time her young man within a yard or two in the very room, and a-using the very clean sheets that you, sir, were to have used! They are our best linen ones, got up beautiful, and a-kept wi' rosemary. Really, sir, one would say you stayed out o' your chammer o' purpose to oblige the young man with a bed!"

"Don't blame them—don't blame them!" said Jocelyn, in an even and characterless voice. "Don't blame her, particularly. She didn't make the circumstances. I did. . . . It was how I served her grandmother. . . . Well, she's gone! You needn't make a mystery of it. Tell it to all the island; say that a man came to marry a wife, and didn't find her at home. Tell everybody that she's run away. It must be known sooner or later."

One of the servants said, after waiting a few moments, "We sha'n't do that, sir."

"Oh! Why won't you?"

"We liked her too well, with all her faults."

"Ah—did you?" said he, and he sighed. He perceived that the younger maids were secretly on Avice's side.

"How does her mother bear it?" Jocelyn asked. "Is she awake?"

Mrs. Pierston had hardly slept, and, having learned the tidings inadvertently, became so distracted and incoherent as to be like a person in a delirium; till, a few moments before he arrived, all her excitement ceased, and she lay in a weak, quiet silence.

"Let me go up," Pierston said. "And see for the doctor."

Passing Avice's chamber, he perceived that the little bed had not been slept on. At the door of the spare room he looked in. In one corner stood a walking-stick—his own.

"Where did that come from?"

"We found it there, sir."

"Ah, yes—I gave it to him. 'Tis like me to play another's game!"

It was the last spurt of bitterness that Jocelyn let escape him. He went on towards Mr. Pierston's room, preceded by the servant.

"Mr. Pierston has come, ma'am," he heard her say to the invalid. But as the latter took no notice the woman rushed forward to the

bed. "What has happened to her, Mr. Pierston? Oh, what do it mean?"

Avice the Second was lying placidly in the position in which the nurse had left her; but no breath came from her lips, and a rigidity of feature was accompanied by the precise expression which had characterized her face when Pierston had her as a girl in his studio. He saw that it was death, though she appeared to have breathed her last only a few moments before.

Ruth Stockwool's composure deserted her. "'Tis the shock of finding Miss Avice gone that has done it!" she cried. "She has killed her mother!"

"Don't say such a terrible thing!" exclaimed Jocelyn.

"But she ought to have obeyed her mother—a good mother as she was! How she had set her heart upon the wedding, poor soul; and we couldn't help her knowing what had happened! Oh, how ungrateful young folk be! That girl will rue this morning's work!"

"We must get the doctor," said Pierston, mechanically, hastening from the room.

When the local practitioner came he merely confirmed their own verdict, and thought her

death had undoubtedly been hastened by shock of the ill news upon a feeble heart, following a long strain of anxiety about the wedding. He did not consider that an inquiry would be necessary.

The two shadowy figures seen through gray gauzes of the morning by Ruth, hours before this time, had gone on to an open place by the north entrance of Sylvania Castle, where the lane to the ruins of the old castle branched off. A listener would not have gathered that a single word passed between them. The man walked with difficulty, supported by the woman. At this spot they stopped and kissed each other a long while.

"We ought to walk all the way to Budmouth, if we wish not to be discovered," he said, sadly. "And I can't even get across the island, even by your help, darling. It is two miles to the foot of the hill."

She, who was trembling, tried to speak consolingly:

"If you could walk we should have to go down the Street of Wells, where perhaps somebody would know me. Now, if we go down here to the Cove, can't we push off

of the little boats I saw there last night, and paddle along close to the shore till we get to the north side? Then we can walk across to the station very well. It is quite calm, and as the tide sets in that direction it will take us along of itself, without much rowing. I've often got round in a boat that way."

This seemed to be the only plan that offered, and abandoning the straight road they wound down the defile spanned farther on by the old castle arch, and forming the original fosse of the fortress.

The stroke of their own footsteps, lightly as these fell, was flapped back to them with impertinent gratuitousness by the vertical faces of the rock, so still was everything around. A little farther, and they emerged upon the open ledge of the lower tier of cliffs, to the right being the sloping pathway leading down to the secluded creek at their base—the single practicable spot of exit from or entrance to the isle on this side by a sea-going craft, once an active wharf, whence many a fine public building had sailed—including St. Paul's Cathedral.

The timorous shadowy shapes descended the footway, one at least of them knowing the place so well that she found it scarcely neces-

sary to guide ^{himself} herself down by touching the ~~vertical face~~ natural wall of stone on her right hand, as her companion did. Thus, ^{his} with quick ^{proceeding} suspensive breathings they arrived at the bottom, and trod the few yards of shingle which, ^{here above} on the forbidding shore hereabout, could be found at ^{this side} this spot alone. It was so solitary as to be unvisited often for four-and-twenty hours by a living soul. Upon the ^{beach} confined beach were drawn up two or three fishing-letters, and a couple of smaller ones, beside them being a rough slipway for launching, and a boat-house of tarred boards. The two lovers united their strength to push the smallest of the boats down the slope, and floating it they scrambled in.

The girl broke the silence by asking, "Where are the oars?"

He felt about the boat, but could find none. "I forgot to look for the oars!" he said.

"They are locked in the boat-house, I suppose. Now we can only steer and trust to the current!"

The currents ^{about strong and} here were of a complicated kind. It was true, as the girl had said, that the tide ran round the north, but at a special moment in every flood there set in along the

shore a narrow reflux, contrary to the general outer flow, called "The Southern" by the local sailors. It was produced by the peculiar curves of coast lying east and west of the Beal; these bent southward in two back streams the up-Channel flow on each side of the peninsula, which two streams united outside the Beal, and there met the direct tidal flow, the confluence of the three currents making the surface of the sea at this point to boil like a pot, even in calmest weather. The disturbed area, as is well known, is called the Race.

Thus, ^{the tide before} although the outer sea was now running northward to the roadstead and the mainland of Wessex, "The Southern" ran in full force towards the Beal and the Race beyond. It caught the lovers' hapless boat in a few moments, and, unable to row across it—mere river's width that it was—they beheld the gray rocks near them, and the grim wrinkled forehead of the isle above, sliding away northward.

They gazed helplessly at each other, though, in the long-living faith of youth, without distinct fear. The undulations increased in magnitude and swung them higher and lower. The boat rocked, received a smart slap of the waves now and then, and wheeled round, so

that the light-ship which stolidly winked at them from the quicksand, the single object which told them of their bearings, was sometimes on their right hand and sometimes on their left. Nevertheless, they could always discern from it that their course, whether stemward or sternward, was steadily south.

A bright idea occurred to the young man. He pulled out his handkerchief and, striking a light, set it on fire. She gave him hers, and he made that flare up also. The only available fuel left was the small umbrella she had brought; this was also kindled, in an open state, and he held it up by the stem till it was consumed.

The light-ship had loomed quite large this time, and a few minutes after they had burned the handkerchiefs and umbrella a colored flame replied to them from the vessel. They flung their arms around each other.

"I knew we shouldn't be drowned!" said Ayice, hysterically.

"I thought we shouldn't too," said he.

With the appearance of day a boat put off to their assistance, and they were towed towards the heavy red hulk with the large white letters on its side.

THE October day thickened into dusk, and Jocelyn sat musing beside the corpse of Mrs. Pierston. Avice having gone away, nobody knew whither, he had acted as the nearest friend of the family, and attended as well as he could to the sombre duties necessitated by her mother's decease. It was doubtful, indeed, if anybody else were in a position to do so. Of Avice the Second's two brothers, one had been drowned at sea, and the other had emigrated, while her only child besides the present Avice had died in infancy. As for her friends, she had become so absorbed in her ambitious and nearly accomplished design of marrying her daughter to Jocelyn, that she had gradually completed that estrangement between herself and the other islanders which had been begun so long ago as when, a young woman, she had herself been asked by Pierston to marry him.

*None of this double
is in I.N.*

On her tantalizing inability to accept the honor offered, she and her husband had been set up in a matter-of-fact business in the stone-trade by her patron, but that unforgettable request in the London studio had made her feel ever since a refined kinship with sculpture and a proportionate aloofness from mere quarrying, which was, perhaps, no more than a venial weakness in Avice the Second. Her daughter's objection to Jocelyn she could never understand. To her own eye he was older than when he had proposed to her.

As he sat darkling here, the ghostly outlines of former shapes taken by his Love came round their sister, the unconscious corpse, confronting him from the wall in sad array, like the pictured Trojan women beheld by Æneas on the walls of Carthage. Many of them had idealized in bust and in figure from time to time, but it was not as such that he remembered and reanimated them now; rather was it in all their natural circumstances, weaknesses and stains. And then as he came to himself their voices grew fainter; they had all gone on their different careers, and he was left here alone.

The probable ridicule that would result

him from the events of the day he did not mind in itself at all. But he would fain have removed the misapprehensions on which it would be based. That, however, was impossible. Nobody would ever know the truth about him—*what* it was he had sought that had so eluded, tantalized, and escaped him; what it was that had led him such a dance, and had at last, as he believed just now, in the freshness of his loss, been discovered in the girl who had left him. It was not the flesh; he had never knelt low to that. Not a woman in the world had been wrecked by him, though he had been impassioned by so many. Nobody would guess the further sentiment—the cordial loving-kindness—which had lain behind what had seemed to him the enraptured fulfilment of a pleasing destiny postponed for forty years. His attraction to the third Avice would be regarded by the world as the selfish designs of an elderly man on a maid.

His life seemed no longer a professional man's experience, but a ghost story; and he would fain have vanished from his haunts on this critical afternoon, as the rest had done. He desired to sleep away his tendencies, to make something happen which would

put an end to his bondage to beauty in the ideal.

So he sat on till it was quite dark and a light was brought. There was a chilly wind blowing outside, and the light-ship on the quicksand afar looked harassed and forlorn. The haggard solitude was broken by a ring at the door.

Pierston heard a voice below, the accents of a woman. They had a ground quality of familiarity, a superficial articulation of strangeness. Only one person in all his experience had ever possessed precisely those tones; rich, as if they had once been powerful. Explanations seemed to be asked for and given, and in a minute he was informed that a lady was down-stairs whom perhaps he would like to see.

"Who is the lady?" Jocelyn asked.

The servant hesitated a little. "Mrs. Leverre—the mother of the young gentleman Miss Avice has run off with."

"Yes—I'll see her," said Pierston.

He covered the face of the dead Avice, and descended. "Leverre," he said to himself. His ears had known that name before to-day. It was the name those travelling Americans

had met in Rome gave the woman he supposed might be Marcia Bencomb.

A sudden adjusting light burst upon many familiar things at that moment. He found the visitor in the drawing-room, standing up, veiled, the carriage which had brought her being in waiting at the door. By the dim light he could see nothing of her features in such circumstances.

"Mr. Pierston?"

"I am Mr. Pierston."

"You represent the late Mrs. Pierston?"

"I do—though I am not one of the family."

"I know it. . . . I am Marcia—after forty years."

"I was divining as much, Marcia. May the lines have fallen to you in pleasant places since we last met! But, of all moments of my life, why do you choose to hunt me up now?"

"Why—I am the stepmother and only relation of the young man your bride eloped with this morning."

"I was just guessing that, too, as I came down-stairs. But—"

"And I am naturally making inquiries."

"Yes. Let us take it quietly and shut the door."

Marcia sat down. And he learned that in conjunction of old things and new was no accident. What Mrs. Pierston had discussed with her nurse and neighbor as vague intelligence was now revealed to Jocelyn at first hand by Marcia herself; how, many years after their separation, and when she was left poor by the death of her impoverished father, she had become the wife of that bygone Jersey lover of hers, who wanted a tender nurse and mother for the infant left him by his first wife recently deceased; how he had died a few years later leaving her with the boy, whom she had brought up at St. Heliers and in Paris, educating him as well as she could with her limited means, till he became the French master at school in Sandbourne; and how, a year ago, she and her son had got to know Mrs. Pierston and her daughter on their visit to the island, "to ascertain," she added, more deliberately, "not entirely for sentimental reasons, what had become of the man with whom I eloped in the first flush of my young womanhood, and only missed marrying by my own will."

Pierston bowed.

"Well, that was how the acquaintance between the children began, and their passion

attachment to each other." She detailed how Avice had induced her mother to let her take lessons in French of young Leverre, rendering their meetings easy. Marcia had never thought of hindering their intimacy, for in her recent years of affliction she had acquired a new interest in the name she had refused to take in her purse-proud young womanhood; and it was not until she knew how determined Mrs. Pierston was to make her daughter Jocelyn's wife that she had objected to her son's acquaintance with Avice. But it was too late to hinder what had been begun. He had lately been ill, and she had been frightened by his not returning home the night before. The note she had received from him that day had only informed her that Avice and himself had gone to be married immediately—whither she did not know.

"What do you mean to do?" she asked.

"I do nothing: there is nothing to be done.

... It is how I served her grandmother—one of Time's revenges."

"Served her so for me?"

"Yes. Now she me for your son."

Marcia paused a long while thinking that over, till, arousing herself, she resumed: "But

can't we inquire which way they went to the island, or gather some particulars from them?"

"Ay—yes. We will."

And Pierston found himself, as in a common quest. He discovered that almost every one of the neighboring inhabitants knew more about the lovers than he did himself.

At the corner some men were engaged in conversation on the occurrence. It was allusive only, but, knowing the dialect, Pierston and Marcia gathered its import easily, soon as it had got light that morning the boats were discovered missing from the creek below, and when the flight of the fugitives was made known it was inferred that they were the culprits.

Unconsciously Pierston turned in the direction of the creek, without regarding whether Marcia followed him, and though it was darker than when Avice and Leverre had descended in the morning he pursued his way down the incline till he reached the water-side.

"Is that you, Jocelyn?"

The inquiry came from Marcia. She was behind him, about half-way down.

"Yes," he said, noticing that it was the first time she had called him by his Christian name.

"I can't see where you are, and I am afraid to follow."

Afraid to follow. How strangely that altered his conception of her! Till this moment she had stood in his mind as the imperious, invincible Marcia of old. There was a strange pathos in this revelation. He went back and felt for her hand. "I'll lead you down," he said. And he did so.

They looked out upon the sea and the light-ship, shining as if it had quite forgotten all about the fugitives. "I am so uneasy," said Marcia. "Do you think they got safely to land?"

"Yes," replied some one other than Jocelyn. It was a boatman smoking in the shadow of the boat-house. He informed her that they were picked up by the light-ship men, and afterwards, at their request, taken across to the opposite shore, where they landed, proceeding thence on foot to the nearest railway station and entering the train for London. This intelligence had reached the island about an hour before.

"They'll be married to-morrow morning!"
said Marcia.

"So much the better. Don't regret it, Marcia. He shall not lose by it. I have no relation in the world except some twentieth cousins in this isle, of whom her father was one, and I'll take steps at once to make her a good match for him. As for me . . . I have lived a day too long!"

None of this

"ALAS FOR THIS GRAY SHADOW, ONCE A MAN!"

IN the month of November which followed, Pierston was lying dangerously ill of a fever at his house in London.

The funeral of the second Avice had happened to be on one of those drenching afternoons of the autumn when the raw rain flies level as the missiles of the ancient inhabitants across the beaked promontory which has formed the scene of this narrative, scarcely alighting except against the upright sides of things sturdy enough to stand erect. One person only followed the corpse into the church as chief mourner, Jocelyn Pierston—fickle lover in the brief, faithful friend in the long run. No means had been found of communicating with Avice before the interment, though the death had been advertised in the local and other papers in the hope that it might catch her eye.

So, when the pathetic procession came out of the porch and moved round into the graveyard, a hired vehicle from Budmouth was seen coming at great speed along the open road from Top-o'-Hill. It stopped at the churchyard gate, and a young man and woman alighted and entered, the vehicle waiting. They glided along the path and reached Pierston's side just as the body was deposited by the grave.

He did not turn his head. He knew it was Avice, with Henri Leverre—by this time, he supposed, her husband. Her remorseful grief, though silent, seemed to impregnate the atmosphere with its heaviness. Perceiving that they had not expected him to be there, Pierston edged back; and when the service was over he kept still farther aloof, an act of consideration which she seemed to appreciate.

Thus, by his own contrivance, neither Avice nor the young man held communication with Jocelyn by word or by sign. After the burial they returned as they had come.

It was supposed that his exposure that day in the bleakest church-yard in Wessex, telling upon a distracted mental and bodily condition, had thrown Pierston into the chill and fever

which held him swaying for weeks between life and death shortly after his return to town. When he had passed the crisis, and began to know again that there was such a state as mental equilibrium and physical calm, he heard a whispered conversation going on around him and the touch of footsteps on the carpet. The light in the chamber was so subdued that nothing around him could be seen with any distinctness. Two living figures were present—a nurse moving about softly, and a visitor. He discerned that the latter was feminine, and for the time this was all.

He was recalled to his surroundings by a voice murmuring the inquiry, "Does the light try your eyes?"

The tones seemed familiar; they were spoken by the woman who was visiting him. He recollected them to be Marcia's, and everything that had happened before he fell ill came back to his mind.

"Are you helping to nurse me, Marcia?" he asked.

"Yes. I have come up to stay here till you are better, as you seem to have no other woman friend who cares whether you are dead or alive. I am living quite near. I am glad you

have got round the corner. We have
very anxious.

"How good you are! . . . And—have
heard of the others?"

"They are married. They have been
to see you, and are very sorry. She sat
you, but you did not know her. She was
broken down when she discovered her moth-
er's death, which had never once occurred
to her as being imminent. They have gone
away again. I thought it best she should
leave, now that you are out of danger. Now
you must be quiet till I come and talk again."

Pierston was conscious of a singular change
in himself, which had been revealed by this
slight discourse. He was no longer the same
man that he had hitherto been. The malign-
ant fever, or his experiences, or both, had
taken away something from him, and put
something else in its place.

During the next days, with further intellect-
ual expansion, he became clearly aware of
what this was. The artistic sense had left
him, and he could no longer attach a definite
sentiment to images of beauty recalled from
the past. His appreciativeness was capable
of exercising itself only on utilitarian matters.

and recollections of Avice's good qualities
alone had any effect on his mind; of her ap-
pearance none at all.

At first he was appalled; and then he said,
"Thank God!"

Marcia, who, with something of her old ab-
solutism, came to his house continually to in-
quire and give orders, and to his room to see
him every afternoon, found out for herself, in
the course of his convalescence, this strange
death of the sensuous side of Jocelyn's nature.
She had said that Avice was getting extraor-
dinary handsome, and that she did not won-
der her stepson lost his heart to her—an
inadvertent remark which she immediately
regretted, in fear lest it should agitate him.
He merely answered, however, "Yes, I sup-
pose she is handsome. She's more—a wise
girl who will make a good housewife in time.
. . . I wish you were not handsome, Marcia!"

"Why?"

"I don't quite know why. Well—it seems
a stupid quality to me. I can't understand
what it is good for any more."

"Oh—I, as a woman, think there's good
in it."

"Is there? Then I have lost all conception

of it. I don't know what has happened to me. I only know I don't regret it. Robin Crusoe lost a day in his illness: I have lost a faculty, for which loss Heaven be praised!

There was something pathetic in this announcement, and Marcia sighed as she said: "Perhaps when you get strong it will come back to you."

Pierston shook his head. It then occurred to him that never since the reappearance of Marcia had he seen her in full daylight without a bonnet and veil, which she always retained on these frequent visits, and that he had been unconsciously regarding her as the Marcia of their early time, a fancy which the small change in her voice well sustained. The stately figure, the good color, the classical profile, the rather large handsome nose and somewhat prominent, regular teeth, the full dark eye, formed still the Marcia of his imagination—the queenly creature who had infatuated him when the first Avice was despised and her successors unknown. It was this old idea which, in his revolt from beauty, had led to his words on her handsomeness. He began wondering now how much remained of that presentation after forty years.

"Why don't you ever let me see you, Marcia?" he asked.

"Oh, I don't know! You mean without my bonnet? You have never asked me to, and I am obliged to wrap up my face with this wool veil because I suffer so from aches in these cold winter winds, though a thick veil is awkward for any one whose sight is not so good as it was."

The impregnable Marcia's sight not so good as it was, and her face in the aching stage of life! These simple things came as sermons to Jocelyn.

"But certainly I will gratify your curiosity," she resumed, good-naturedly. "It is really a compliment that you should still take that sort of interest in me."

She had moved round from the dark side of the room to the lamp—for the daylight had gone—and she now suddenly took off the bonnet, veil and all. She stood revealed to his eyes as remarkably good-looking, considering the lapse of years.

"I am—vexed!" he said, turning his head aside impatiently. "You are fair and five and thirty—not a day more. You still suggest beauty. You won't do as a chastisement, Marcia!"

"Ah, but I may! To think that you know woman no better after all this time!"

"How?"

"To be so easily deceived. Think: ~~is~~ lamplight; and your sight is weak at present; and . . . Well, I have no reason for being ~~so~~ thing but candid now, God knows! so I ~~will~~ tell you. . . . My husband was younger than myself, and he had an absurd wish to make people think he had married a young and fresh-looking woman. To fall in with his vanity, I tried to look it. We were often in Paris, and I became as skilled in beautifying artifices as any *passée* wife of the Faubourg St. Germain. Since his death I have kept up the practice, partly because the vice is almost ineradicable, and partly because I found it helped me with men in bringing up my boy on small means. At this moment I am frightfully made up. But I can cure that. I'll come in to-morrow morning, if it is bright, just as I really am; you'll find that Time has not disappointed you. Remember, I am as old as yourself; and I look it!"

The morrow came, and with it Marcia, ~~as~~ early, as she had promised. It happened to be sunny, and, shutting the bedroom door,

went round to the window, where she uncovered immediately, in his full view, and said, "See if I am satisfactory now to you who think beauty vain. The rest of me—and it is a good deal—lies on my dressing-table at home. I shall never put it on again—never!"

But she was a woman; and her lips quivered, and there was a tear in her eye as she exposed the ruthless treatment to which she had subjected herself. The cruel morning-rays—as with Jocelyn under Avice's scrutiny—showed in their full bareness, unenriched by addition, undisguised by the arts of color and shade, the thin remains of what had once been Marcia's majestic bloom. She stood the image and superscription of Age—an old woman, pale and shrivelled, her forehead ploughed, her cheek hollow, her hair white as snow. To this the ~~face he once kissed~~ ^{one hand} had been brought by the raspings, chisellings, scourgings, bakings, ~~and~~ ^{and} freezings of forty invidious years—by the thinkings of more than half a lifetime.

"I am sorry if I shock you," she went on, huskily but firmly, as he did not speak; "but the moth eats the garment somewhat in such an interval."

"Yes—yes! . . . Marcia, you are a brave woman. You have the courage of the great women of history. I can no longer love; but I admire you from my soul!"

"Don't say I am great. Say I have begun to be passably honest. It is more than enough."

"Well—I'll say nothing, then, more than how wonderful it is that a woman should have been able to put back the clock of time thirty years!"

"It shames me now, Jocelyn. I shall never do it any more."

As soon as he was strong enough he got her to take him round to his studio in a carriage. The place had been kept aired, but the shutters were shut, and they opened them themselves. He looked round upon the familiar objects—some complete and matured, the main of them seedlings, grafts, and scions of beauty, waiting for a mind to grow to perfection in.

"No—I don't like them!" he said, turning away. "They are as ugliness to me! I don't feel a single touch of kin with or interest in any one of them whatever."

"Jocelyn—this is sad."

"No—not at all." He went again towards the door. "Now let me look round." He looked back, Marcia remaining silent. "The Aphrodites—how I insulted her fair form by those failures!—the Freyas, the Nymphs and Fauns, Eves, Avices, and other innumerable Well-Beloveds—I want to see them never any more! . . . 'Instead of sweet smell there shall be stink, and there shall be burning instead of beauty,' said the prophet."

And they came away. On another afternoon they went to the National Gallery, to test his taste in paintings, which had formerly been good. As she had expected, it was just the same with him there. He saw no more to move him, he declared, in the time-defying presentations of Perugino, Titian, Sebastiano, and other statuesque creators than in the work of the pavement artist they had passed on their way.

"It is strange!" said she.

"I don't regret it. I have lost a faculty which has, after all, brought me my greatest sorrows, if a few little pleasures. Let us be gone."

He was now so well advanced in convales-

cence that it was deemed a most desirable thing to take him down into his native air. Marcia agreed to accompany him. "I don't see why I shouldn't," said she. "An old friendless woman like me, and you an old friendless man."

"Yes. Thank Heaven I am old at last! The curse is removed!"

It may be shortly stated here that after his departure for the isle Pierston never again saw his studio or its contents. He had been down there but a brief while when, finding his sense of beauty in art and nature absolutely extinct, he directed his agent in town to disperse the whole collection; which was done. His lease of the building was sold, and in the course of time another sculptor won admiration there from those who knew not Joseph. The next year his name figured on the retired list of Academicians.

As time went on he grew as well as one of his age could expect to be after such a blasting illness, but remained on the isle, in the only house he now possessed, a comparatively small one at the top of the Street of Wells. A growing sense of friendship which it would

be foolish to interrupt led him to take a somewhat similar house for Marcia quite near, and remove her furniture thither from Sandbourne. Whenever the afternoon was fine he would call for her, and they would take a stroll together towards the Beal, or the ancient castle, seldom going the whole way, his sciatica and her rheumatism effectually preventing them, except in the driest atmospheres. He had now changed his style of dress entirely, appearing always in a homely suit of local make, and of the fashion of thirty years before, the achievement of a tailoress at East Quarriers. He also let his iron-gray beard grow as it would, and what little hair he had left from the baldness which had followed the fever. And thus, numbering in years but two-and-sixty, he might have passed for seventy-five.

Though their early adventure as lovers had happened so long ago, its history had become known in the isle with mysterious rapidity and fulness of detail. The gossip to which its bearing on their present friendship gave rise was the subject of their conversation on one of these walks along the cliffs.

"It is extraordinary what an interest our

neighbors take in our affairs," he observed. "They say, 'those old folk ought to marry; better late than never.' That's how people are—wanting to round off other people's histories in the best machine-made conventional manner."

"Yes. They keep on about it to me, indirectly."

"Do they! I believe a deputation will come upon us some morning, requesting, in the interests of match-making, that we will please to get married as soon as possible. . . . How near we were to doing it forty years ago—only you were so independent! I thought you would have come back, and was much surprised that you didn't."

"My independent ideas were not blameworthy in me, as an islander, though as a kimberlin young lady perhaps they would have been. There was simply no reason, from an islander's point of view, why I should come back, and I didn't. My father kept that view before me, and I bowed to his judgment."

"And so the island ruled our destiny though we were not on it. Yes—we are hands not our own. . . . Did you ever tell your husband?"

"No."

"Did he ever hear anything?"

"Not that I am aware."

Calling upon her one day, he found her in a state of great discomfort. In certain gusty winds the chimneys of the little house she had taken here smoked intolerably, and one of these winds was blowing then. Her drawing-room fire could not be kept burning, and, rather than let a woman who suffered from rheumatism shiver fireless, he asked her to come round and lunch with him as she had often done before. As they went he thought, not for the first time, how needless it was that she should be put to this inconvenience by their occupying two houses when one would better suit their now constant companionship, and disembarass her of the objectionable chimneys. Moreover, by marrying Marcia, and establishing a parental relation with the young people, the rather delicate business of his making them a regular allowance would become a natural proceeding.

And so the zealous wishes of the neighbors to give a geometrical shape to their story were fulfilled almost in spite of the chief parties themselves. When he put the question to her

distinctly, Marcia admitted that she had always regretted the imperious decision of her youth; and she made no ado about accepting him.

"I have no love to give, you know, Marcia," he said. "But such friendship as I am capable of is yours till the end."

"It is nearly the same with me—perhaps not quite. But, like the other people, I have somehow felt, and you will understand why, that I ought to be your wife before I die."

It chanced that a day or two before the ceremony, which was fixed to take place very shortly after the foregoing conversation, Marcia's rheumatism suddenly became acute. The attack promised, however, to be only temporary, owing to some accidental exposure of herself in making preparations for removal, and as they thought it undesirable to postpone their union for such a reason, Marcia, after being well wrapped up, was wheeled into the church in a chair.

A month thereafter, when they were sitting at breakfast one morning, Marcia exclaimed, "Well—good heavens!" while reading a letter she had just received from Avice, who was

living with her husband in a house Pierston had bought for them at Sandbourne.

Locelyn looked up.

"Why, Avice says she wants to be separated from Henri! Did you ever hear of such a thing? She's coming here about it to-day."

"Separated? What does the child mean?" Pierston read the letter. "Ridiculous nonsense!" he continued. "She doesn't know what she wants. I say she sha'n't be separated! Tell her so, and there's an end of it. Why, how long have they been married? Not twelve months. What will she say when they have been married twenty years!"

Marcia remained reflecting. "I think that remorseful feeling she unluckily has at times of having disobeyed her mother and caused her death, makes her irritable," she murmured. "Poor child!"

Lunch-time had hardly come when Avice arrived, looking very tearful and excited. Marcia took her into an inner room, had a conversation with her, and they came out together.

"Oh, it's nothing," said Marcia. "I tell her she must go back directly she has had some luncheon."

"Ah, that's all very well!" sobbed Avice.

"B-b-but if you two had been m-married so long as I have, y-you wouldn't say go like that!"

"What is it all about?" inquired Pierston.

"He said that if he were to die I—I—she be looking out for somebody with fair hair, gray eyes, just—just to spite him in his grave because he's dark, and he's quite sure I don't like dark people! And then he said— But I won't be so treacherous as to tell any more about him! I wish—"

"Avice, your mother did this very thing. And she went back. Now you are to do the same. Let me see; there's a train—"

"She must have something to eat first. Sit down, dear."

The question was settled by the arrival of Henri himself at the end of luncheon with a very anxious and pale face. Pierston went off to a business meeting, and left the young couple to adjust their differences in their own way.

His business was, among kindred undertakings which followed the extinction of the Well-Beloved and other ideals, to advance a scheme for the closing of the old natural fountains in the Street of Wells, because of

their possible contamination, and supplying the townlet with water from pipes—a scheme that was carried out at his expense, as is well known. He was also engaged in acquiring some old moss-grown, mullioned Elizabethan cottages, for the purpose of pulling them down because they were damp; which he afterwards did, and built new ones, with hollow walls and full of ventilators.

At present he is sometimes mentioned as "the late Mr. Pierston" by gourd-like young art critics; and his productions are alluded to as those of a man not without genius, whose powers were insufficiently recognized in his lifetime.

THE UNIVERSITY OF MINNESOTA

GRADUATE SCHOOL

Report

of

Committee on Examination

This is to certify that we the undersigned, as a committee of the Graduate School, have given Mary Ellen Chase final oral examination for the degree of Master of Arts . We recommend that the degree of Master of Arts be conferred upon the candidate.

Minneapolis, Minnesota

May 28 1918

Joseph Beach
Chairman
Carlton Brown
C. A. Moore

THE UNIVERSITY OF MINNESOTA

GRADUATE SCHOOL

Report
of
Committee on Thesis

The undersigned, acting as a Committee of the Graduate School, have read the accompanying thesis submitted by Mary Ellen Chase for the degree of Master of Arts.

They approve it as a thesis meeting the requirements of the Graduate School of the University of Minnesota, and recommend that it be accepted in partial fulfillment of the requirements for the degree of Master of Arts.

Joseph Beal

Chairman

David F. Swenson

C. A. Moore.

May 28 1918

A comparative study of two versions of Thomas Hardy's novel, The Well-Beloved,-- the serial (1892) and the book (1897)-- with an attempt to account for changes in incident and plot, for eliminations and additions, and for textual changes; accompanied by an annotated copy of the book, so arranged that all changes are evident.

A thesis submitted to the
Faculty of the Graduate School of the
University of Minnesota

by

Mary Ellen Chase

In partial fulfillment of the requirements
for the degree of
Master of Arts

June

1 9 1 8

1004
238

Introduction.

The statement made by Thomas Hardy in the preface to The Well-Beloved (Harper and Brothers, 1897)¹ is quite likely to prove unimportant to the casual, and misleading to the critical, student. He writes:

"The present is the first publication of this tale in an independent form; and a few chapters have been rewritten since it was issued in the periodical press in 1892."²

Such an announcement would indicate minor rather than major changes, and would hardly lead one to anticipate a reconstruction of plot making necessary the complete elimination of four chapters,³ the partial elimination of another four,⁴ consequent substitutions, the addition from beginning to end of numerous descriptive passages, the exclusion of much melodramatic and sentimental material and countless textual changes. Yet these are evident upon a comparison of the story in serial form (1892) and in the later book version (1897).

The purpose of this thesis is to set forth the result of such a comparative study, and to draw certain conclusions, some ob-

1. The first edition of The Well-Beloved was published in 1897 by Osgood, M'Ilvaine & Co., London. In that same year the imprint changed to that of Harper and Brothers. The book used in this study and submitted with annotations and inserts, is that of Harper and Brothers, which is presumably, however, identical with the slightly earlier edition.

2. The story, under the title The Pursuit of the Well-Beloved, was published in the Illustrated London News, Sept.-Dec., 1892.

3. Chapters XXX, XXXI, XXXII, XXXIII in I L N.

4. Chapters VIII, XXVII, XXVIII, XXIX in I L N.

vious, as to the changes which gave to the book its present character. The method to be employed is here outlined:

I. The summarizing of the story of both serial and book that changes in incident and plot may be easily seen.

II. A consideration of changes in incident and plot.

III. A consideration of eliminations and additions, other than those involved in changes in incident and plot.

IV. A consideration of textual changes.

V. A general comparison of the two versions, designed to summarize the superior points of the book version.

Conclusion.

I.

The Summarizing of the Story of both Serial and Book.

The Pursuit of the Well-Beloved.
Part First.
A Young Man of Twenty.

The Well-Beloved.
Part First.
A Young Man of Twenty.

Jocelyn Pearston⁵, a young London sculptor, tries to burn countless love-letters in his rooms⁶ on the evening before he leaves for his father's home, which is situated in a tiny village⁷ on a rocky peninsula⁸, almost an island, jutting from the main land of Wessex. Old affection for the writers of the letters prevents him from burning them, and, bundling them in his coat, he takes them with him. At home he sees again Avice Caro, a playmate of his boyhood. Forgetting that she is now older, she kisses him, for which she is reproved by her mother. During his stay, on the occasion of her discovering him trying for the second time to burn the letters, they become engaged, he imagining her to be the embodiment of the Well-Beloved.

Upon his leaving for London, they agree that she shall meet him and walk with him to an old castle to observe the betrothal custom of the isle. Instead she sends a note, objecting to the custom but swearing fealty to him.

Jocelyn Pierston⁵ a young London sculptor, visits his father's home, which is situated in a tiny village⁷ on the island-like Gibraltar of Wessex.⁸ There he sees again Avice Caro, a playmate of his boyhood. Forgetting that she is now older, she kisses him, for which she is reproved by her mother. During his stay, however they become engaged, since he imagines for the moment that she is the embodiment of the Well-Beloved.

Upon his leaving for London, they agree that she shall meet him and walk with him to an old castle to observe the betrothal custom of the isle. Instead she sends a note, objecting to the custom but swearing fealty to him. He starts alone along the narrow strip of land connecting the isle to the main land. He meets a woman, Marcia Bencomb who asks him for a loan of money. A terrible storm arises, and they are forced to take shelter under an old boat. She tells him she is running away from her father, a prosperous stone merchant.

5. The spelling in the serial is Pearston; in the book, Pierston.
6. The incident of burning the letters forms Chapter I. Relics in I L N. The chapter is not present in the book.
7. East Wake in serial; East Quarriers in book. The town at the head of the peninsula is known as Slopeway Well in the serial; Street of Wells, in the book.
8. The name, Gibraltar of Wessex, does not appear in the serial.

He starts alone along the narrow strip of land connecting the isle to the main land. He meets a woman, Marcia Bencomb, who asks him for money. A terrible storm arises, and they are forced to take shelter under an old boat. She tells him she is running away from her father, a prosperous stone merchant.

The storm abating, they go together to London where after a few days they marry. After four years of married life, during which they quarrel frequently, they agree to an informal separation. Marcia goes to America with her father, and decides to live always on the Pacific coast.

For twenty years Pearston, who succeeds in his art, imagines that he has found the Well-Beloved in one form after another (notably that of Mrs. Pine-Avon) but she always eludes him. Upon a social occasion he learns by letter of the death of Avice Caro. He goes back to the isle, and watches from a distance the burial of Avice.

The storm abating, they go together to London. They decide to marry, but finally think better of it. Marcia returns after a few days to her home, and Pierston hears later that she has gone on a tour around the world. He also hears that Avice Caro has married her cousin and left the isle.

Part Second⁹

A Young Man of Forty.

He falls in love with Avice Caro the Second, the nineteen year old daughter of the first Avice. He spends the summer on the isle, renting Dell-i-th'-Rock¹¹ Castle, an old manor house. Avice works for him. Upon her telling him she is troubled and wishes to go away from the isle, he takes her to London. He asks her to marry him, at the same time telling her of his affair with her mother. She confesses

Part Second⁹

A Young Man of Forty.

For twenty years Pierston, who succeeds in art, imagines he has found the Well-Beloved in many forms (notably that of Mrs. Pine-Avon) but she always eludes him. Upon a social occasion he learns by letter of Avice Caro's death. He returns to the isle and from a distance views the burial of Avice.

He loves Ann Avice Caro¹⁰, the daughter of the first Avice. He rents Sylvania¹¹ Castle for the

9. Note the differing points of division between first and second parts. This matter will receive later consideration.

10. The name Ann Avice is not used in the serial story.

11. Note difference in name.

to having secretly married Isaac Pearston of the isle. Jocelyn takes her home. In a few months Isaac Pearston's child is born, and he returns to Avice. Jocelyn starts him in business.

Summer. Avice works for him. She tells him she is troubled and wishes to leave home, and he takes her to London. He asks her to marry him, and tells her of his affair with her mother. She confesses to a secret marriage with Isaac Pierston of the isle. Jocelyn takes her home, where in a few months Isaac Pierston's child is born. Isaac returns to Avice, and Jocelyn starts him in business.

Part Third.

A Young Man of Fifty-Nine. ¹²

Pearston has lived on the continent a great deal during the past twenty years. By letter he hears of Isaac Pearston's death. He goes to see Avice, and loves her daughter, the third Avice, who marries him to please her mother. They live in London. Avice is plainly very unhappy. He takes her home to the isle, where her mother soon dies. Her former lover, Henri Leverre, returns to the isle. She tells Pearston of her love for Henri, and he, after considering the matter gravely, decides to assume a belief that Marcia is alive. He does this, and gives Avice to Henri, after settling a fortune upon her. He determines to go to America and end his days, but suddenly decides to end his life at once, which he attempts by setting himself adrift in an open boat. He is picked up, however, and taken ashore where he is very ill. Upon coming to himself, he discovers Marcia is his nurse. She has seen his advertisements, and has returned to him.

12. Note difference in title.

13. No such relationship in serial story.

Part Third.

A Young Man Turned Sixty. ¹²

Pierston has lived on the continent a great deal during the past twenty years. He receives a letter from Avice telling of her husband's death. He goes to see her, and falls in love with her daughter, the third Avice, who consents to an engagement with him to please her mother. On their wedding eve, she elopes with Henri Leverre, her former lover and a step-son of Marcia Bencomb Leverre.¹³ Her mother dies the next morning. Marcia comes to ascertain the truth concerning the elopement. Pierston becomes ill, and Marcia cares for him. At last they are married.

II.

A Consideration of Changes in Incident and Plot.

A comparative reading of the two summaries given is sufficient to distinguish the changes which make the familiar book edition different in incident and plot from that of the magazine. The chief differences in the original, as compared with the later, plot are the marriage of Pearston and Marcia and the later marriage of Pearston and the third Avice. Upon these differences clearly depend all the incidents, except one, of the serial story. From the marriage of Pearston and Marcia as a natural outcome occurs a violent and somewhat melodramatic quarrel between them,¹⁴ during the course of which Marcia hurls a valued piece of sculpture upon the floor, and the informal separation after four years of "common residence", by which each promises the other "never to intrude into that other's life again."¹⁵ The incidents of Part Second are common to both serial and book. From the marriage of Pearston and Avice the Third, arise the more intricate complications in the relations of Avice and Henri,¹⁶ the cogitations of Pearston over his right to Avice when

14. See Chap. VIII in I L N . A Miscalculation.

15. See Chap. IX in I L N, - also Insert 14, p. 74 in book.

16. See Chap. XXX in I L N, - He Becomes Retrogressive, and Chap. XXXI in I L N - The Magnanimous Thing. Also Inserts 59 and 60, pp. 292 - 293 in book.

she does not love him,¹⁷ his scheme "based on the idea of resuscitating his first wife in spirit and seeming,"¹⁸ his decision to assume Marcia's death and to give up Avice to Henri,¹⁹ his letters to Somers,²⁰ his attempt at suicide,²¹ and his final ironic discovery that Marcia, having seen his advertisements, has come back so that they may make their "final bows and exits" together.²² As was formerly suggested, the one incident of any prominence independent of the serial plot, is that of the burning of the letters, which forms the first chapter of the magazine version, and which recurs when Pearston at home on the isle completes their destruction.²³

The plot of the book version is less complicated, since Pearston marries no one except Marcia, which he does in the last chapter; and the incidents enumerated above, which add so much of melodrama to the serial story, are, by the natural sequence of events, entirely lacking.

17. See Chap. XXIX in I L N - The Elusiveness Continues. Also Insert 56, p.283 in book. These cogitations bear a resemblance to passages in Jude, The Obscure, and in this connection it is interesting to quote from F.A.Hedgcock in his book Thomas Hardy - Penseur et Artiste, p.284; "Il est intéressant de noter que cette 'éskisse fantaisiste' a été écrite au moment (1892) où M.Hardy rédigeait le premier plan de Jude the Obscure, celui de ses romans où il est le plus franchement réaliste."

18. See Chap.XXXI in I L N- The Magnanimous Thing. Also Insert 60 p. 293 in book.

19. See Chap.XXXII in I L N- The Pursuit Abandoned,) Also
20. See Chap.XXXII in I L N- " " ") Insert
21. See Chap.XXXII in I L N- " " ") 61 p.294
in book.

22. See Chap.XXXIII in I L N- He Becomes Aware of New Conditions. Also Insert 62, p. 295 in book.

23. See Chap. III in I L N- The Incarnation Is Assumed to be a True One, Also Inserts 1 b, 2, and 3 on p. 13 in book.

The Writing of the Serial.

Before attempting to account for the changes in incident and plot which Hardy felt impelled to make before the book edition was issued, let us consider the serial story by itself. Why should a novelist of Hardy's standing be willing to claim the authorship of such a distinctly inferior production as The Pursuit of the Well-Beloved, especially directly after the publication of Tess of the D'Urbervilles?

A. Since a publication of the standing of the Illustrated London News doubtless offered large remuneration to authors of note, the story may have been a "pot-boiler". This assumption, however, would bear more weight had the story appeared before Hardy had given to the world such novels as The Return of the Native, The Mayor of Casterbridge, The Woodlanders, and Tess. Though investigation has brought no proof to light, it hardly seems probable, that the author of books as widely read as these in at least two continents should need to write a pot-boiler.

B. The story may denote a welcome reaction ^{to the author} from the tragedy of Tess,²⁴ or a by-way ramble before he again takes to the high-road with Jude, the Obscure; for in spite of the assertion of several critics as to the lack of comedy in the book edition, we must echo Mr. Duffin's characterization of Pierston as an "unfortunate fool"²⁵ and of the book as a "satire, with studied exaggerations

24. It is interesting at this juncture to quote again from Hedgecock p.285: "Est - ce pas une simple coincidence que chacun de ces livres imaginatifs suit de près un livre plus sérieux et plus solide? Ainsi, Ethelberta vient juste après Far from the Madding Crowd, The Return of the Native succède A Laodicean. après avoir donné Tess, le romancier se délasse à la composition de The Well-Beloved."

25. Thomas Hardy, by H. C. Duffin, p. 24.

for the purpose of caricature, on the artistic temperament."²⁶

Mr. Duffin might have used other and more pertinent adjectives had he been as familiar with the serial story as was Miss Annie McDonnell, whose book on Thomas Hardy was published before the appearance of The Well-Beloved in book form. "The roll of his loves has yet something of the comic about it", she writes.²⁷ We agree most heartily. Certainly such situations as those in which Pearston, kneeling upon the half-consumed letters of his former sweethearts, proposes to Avice the First and a few days later passionately kisses each article of Marcia's clothing as he dries it before the fire, must be interpreted as designedly comic from the pen of the author of Tess. Only comedy or satire can explain as wild a reaction as this, if reaction it is.

C. The most probable hypothesis, however, is that he was following a two-fold precedent both in contributing to the Illustrated London News and in writing the type of story which he did. To one reviewing the numbers of the News from 1890 to 1894, it is clear that a serial by a well-known author seems to have been the editor's policy. Henry James contributed Greville Fane, Walter Besant, The Rebel Queen, and Robert Louis Stevenson Uma. The Graphic was not behind in the race for names of prominence, and proudly announced a serial story by Mr. George Meredith.

Both The Illustrated London News and The Graphic gave space to but one piece of fiction each week. It therefore behooved the authors to dip deep into the wells of their imagination, and to create some-

26. Thomas Hardy, by H. C. Duffin, p. 44.

27. Thomas Hardy, by Annie McDonnell, p. 67.

thing which would amuse and entertain the later Victorian reader. Sentimentality, melodrama, suspense, and situations more or less impossible were apparently tricks of the trade, and Hardy, like his contemporaries, generously employed them all.

The Revision of the Serial.

When one notes the numerous changes made in the plot of the original story, it is not hard to imagine that Hardy felt some consternation in the preparation of his serial for publication in book form. In view of his position as a novelist and in fairness to the ideals of his art, revision was imperative. Evidently in his reconstruction of the plot Hardy held consciously or unconsciously to three aims, for three results are distinctly apparent: A) Greater plausibility; B) Dramatic effect as opposed to melodramatic; C) Greater unity of structure.

A. The plot of the revised story is unlikely enough. Mr. William Lyon Phelps declares that it is "simply absurd, almost as whimsical as anything in *Alice in Wonderland*".²⁸ But though our credulity is tested sufficiently by the grandmother, mother and daughter figuring as successive sweethearts of Pierston, Hardy does not ask us in the book version to believe that Marcia returned simply in answer to Pearston's advertisements. After knowing Marcia in the serial story, listening to the quarrels between her and Jocelyn, and remembering her letter to him in which she vows never to see him again, we are not prepared for her return in the last chapter. There is not sufficient motivation for such an act. But in the book, where, it will be remembered, Jocelyn and Marcia

28. The Novels of Thomas Hardy, North American Review, Oct. 1909, p. 502.

do not marry until the last chapter, Marcia is the step-mother of Henri Leverre, and quite naturally returns, not primarily to see Pierston, but to make inquiries as to the elopement of her son and Avise Caro.

B. Without a process of expurgation Hardy would have brought upon himself from his critics far graver charges of melodrama and sentimentality than he has sustained.²⁹ The elimination of most of the melodramatic incidents follows as a natural result of the plot reconstruction. We are spared the exhibitions of Marcia's temper, Pearston's cogitations over his right to Avise the Third, his conversation with Henri. Instead we have the elopement of Avise and Henri and the death of Mrs. Pierston.³⁰ - two scenes which, while they do not compare in dramatic effect with scenes in Hardy's greater books, are more truly dramatic than anything in the serial.

But since the revision of the plot did not remove all situations objectionably melodramatic, Hardy eliminated and revised incidents, which would in their earlier form detract from his higher ideal of the book. For example, the last words of the serial story, which, had Hardy considered them worth preserving, might have served to end the book, are excluded. The final paragraph of the letter is a dignified characterization of "the late Mrs. Pierston", while in the serial Pearston, upon contrasting the withered Marcia with a photograph of the third Avise, screams hysterically:

29. See H.C. Duffin - Thomas Hardy - p.100; Lascelles Abercrombie - Thomas Hardy - A Critical Study - p. 14; and an article in the Academy, Vol. 51, p. 345.

30. This incident in the serial story is handled very briefly.

"I - I - it is too - too droll - this ending to my would be romantic history! Ho - ho - ho!"

The burning of the letters, to which we have referred as independent of the plot construction, and which figures in two episodes, is eliminated by Hardy when preparing the book for publication. It is necessary to quote but one episode.

"He had hardly left the door when Mrs. Caro's servant ran out to ask him if he had left his coat behind him when he called on the day of his arrival. They had found it in the house, and had not been sure whose it was.

'Oh, yes, it is mine', said Jocelyn hastily, 'I forgot it.'

The great coat was strapped up around the letters just as he had arranged it, but he wondered as he walked on whether Mrs. Caro or Avice had looked inside as a means of identification. Determining to run no further risks, he set about destroying the letters then and there. He went into the garden, threw them down, made a loose heap of a portion, and put a match to the windy side.

By the help of a pitchfork to stir them about, he was fairly successful, though as soon as he ceased to stir, they ceased to burn. He was deeply occupied in the business of feeding the fire. when he heard a voice behind him.

'Mr. Pearston - I wasn't angry with you just now. When you were gone I thought - you might mistake me, and I felt I could do no less than come and assure you of my friendship still.'

Turning he saw the blushing Avice immediately behind him.

'You are a good, dear girl!' said he impulsively, as he threw down the pitch fork, and, seizing her hand set upon her cheek the kiss that should have been the response to hers on the day of his coming.

'Darling Avice, forgive me for the slight that day! Say you do. Come, now!'

She blushed rather than spoke her forgiveness, and shrank away, sitting down upon a squared stone round which the unburnt sheets of paper were strewn.

'What are you burning?' she asked.

'O, only some papers I hadn't time to destroy before I left town'

She scanned more closely the packets scattered around her. 'They are letters in different hand-writings.'

'Yes'.

'O Joce- Mr. Pearston, they are in women's hands! They are love-letters.'

He did not answer for a moment, during which interval a sudden sadness overspread her face. She covered her eyes with her hand.

'I see - I see now!' she whispered. 'I am - only one - in a long, long row!'

From the white sheets of paper round her seemed to rise the ghosts of Isabella, Florence, Winifred, Lucy, Jane and Evangeline - each writer from her own bundle respectively - and Maud and Dorothea from the flames. Then a sudden sense of what a good and sincere girl Avice was, overcame the spectres, and rushing up to her and kneeling down upon the letters, he exclaimed,

'Avice, dear Avice, I say to you what I have never said to one of them or to any other woman, living or dead: "Will you have me as your husband?"'³¹

C. "Hardy is always the architect", writes Mr. William Lyon Phelps. "His novels give the same kind of pleasure to the mind as any superbly perfect outline."³²

A comparative study of the two versions from the stand-point of form is enlightening. A difference was noted in Chapter I (of this thesis) between the points of division of Parts First and Second in the serial and in the book. In the former, structure is sacrificed to melodrama, and Part First ends with Pearson, a man of forty, viewing the burial of Avice the First. Such a sentimental situation doubtless stimulated the interest and piqued the curiosity of magazine readers, who breathlessly waited for a week until the suspense should be over, and the poor man rescued from his melancholy position. But in the revision of the story, Hardy's regard for unity of structure comes to the front, and the point of division is chronological rather than sentimental.

A closer relationship of parts to the whole, or of one char-

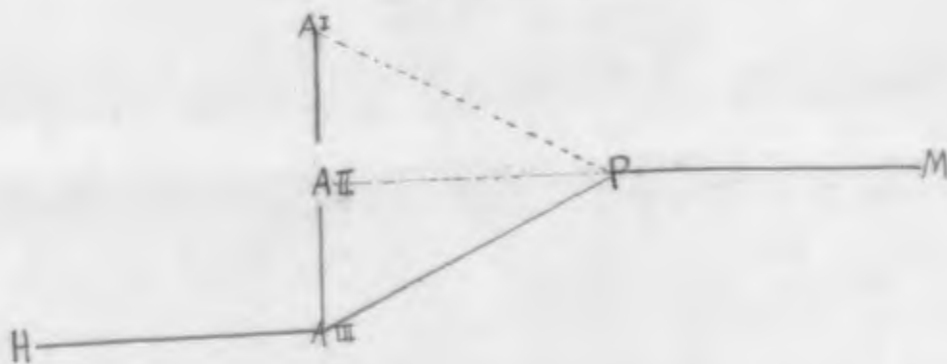
31. See Chap. III I L N - The Incarnation is Assumed to be a True One. Also Inserts 1⁵ and 2. p. 13 in book.

32. North American Review, Oct. 1909, p. 502.

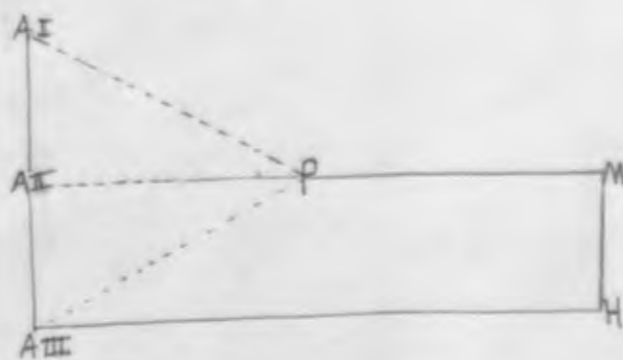
acter to another, is obtained by the plot pattern as it stands in the book version. Here Hardy's architectural genius asserts itself. Instead of allowing Marcia no connection whatever with the three Avices as she is depicted in the carelessly constructed serial, Hardy makes her the step-mother of Henri Leverre, and in so doing makes a plot pattern whose parts are related one to the other.

Diagrams may well serve to illustrate this point:

Plot Pattern of Serial.



Plot Pattern of Book.



III.

A Consideration of Eliminations and Additions.

The revision of the serial plot with its consequent elimination and substitution of incidents was plainly not sufficient to the mind of Hardy. There were still necessary minor eliminations for the sake of freeing the story from further evidences of sentimentality, and additions for the purpose of aesthetic and pictorial effect.

Minor Eliminations.

The chapter headings in the serial story received their share of Hardy's blue-pencilling. Seven out of twenty-six common to both versions were changed. In the majority of cases the headings were shortened, and consequent conciseness did away with the tinge of melodrama. For example: Chap. XX in the serial is called A Homely Medium Does Not Dull the Image. In the book where it appears as Chap. XI in Part II it is called The Image Persists. A Grille Descends Between the Vision and Him is the somewhat portentous heading of Chap. XXI in the magazine version, but it is somewhat simplified by the elimination of the last four words before it heads Chap. XII of Part II in the later publication.³³

Of minor eliminations for the sake of freeing the story of sentimental passages, some typical instances are here cited:³⁴

33. It should be noted that in the serial story the chapters are numbered consecutively with no regard for the division into parts. Other examples of revised chapter headings are: Chaps. IV of Part III and XXVI, Chaps. II of Part III and XXIV, Chaps. XIII of Part II and XXII, Chaps. X of Part II and XIX, and Chaps. II of Part I and III.

34. Other instances may be found on the following pages of the annotated book: pp. 45 and 59, and on Inserts 20, 30, 33, 48 and 59.

A. The occasion upon which Pierston dries Marcia's clothing by the fire in the London lodging-house is common to both versions. The elimination, however, made in the passage from the serial story is interesting. The serial reads, "He kissed each of the articles of apparel, and in the course of ten minutes adored her."³⁵ The book is content with the simple statement, "In the course of ten minutes he adored her."³⁵

B. "'How long you have been away!' she (Marcia) moaned tearfully, leaning her face against his shoulder."³⁶ (Serial)

"'How long you have been away!' she said with a show of impatience."³⁶ (Book)

C. The proposal which Pierston at sixty is making to Avice the Second when Avice the First comes into his view is far more dignified and fitting for a man of his age as it stands in the book with the following sentence eliminated:

"'Now, Avice,' he began archly. 'I feel, of course, your situation at present, and Heaven forbid I should say anything premature. But your life with your late husband has been such that I think it no harm to put an idea into your mind as regards the future, for you to turn over - not too seriously - just for what it is worth.'³⁷

38

Additions.

The setting of the serial story is distinctly inferior to that of the book. Description is constantly sacrificed to narrative and dialogue. It is not surprising, therefore, to discover that Hardy,

35. See p. 42 of book.

36. See p. 60 of book.

37. See Insert 47 on p. 235 of book.

38. It seems well to mention here the artistic and finished effect gained by the apt quotations given at the beginning of every part. These do not appear in the serial.

the great master of setting, has added many paragraphs which not only improve, but in many cases make, both background and setting.

The Isle of Portland, or the Gibraltar of Wessex as it is called in the book, certainly afforded great opportunities for the artist and the historian; and yet in writing the serial story Hardy was apparently too hurried or too careless to make good use of the material offered.

The additions in the book version may be roughly classified under two heads:

A. Descriptive passages which improve the setting, lend local color, and give an artistic finish to the book.

B. Passages which have to do with the pagan history of the isle, and which give to the book a decided aesthetic tone.

A. We quote here two descriptive passages which do not in any form or likeness appear in the serial.³⁹

1. "Pierston found himself on the south shore of England in the gloom of the aforesaid evening, the isle, as he looked across at it with his approach, being first discernible as a moping countenance, a creature sullen with the sense that he was about to withdraw from its keeping the rarest object it had ever owned..... He passed the ruins of the Tudor castle and the long, featureless rib of grinding pebbles that screened off the outer sea, which could be heard lifting and dipping rhythmically in the wide vagueness of the Bay."⁴⁰

2. "The evening and night winds here were.....charged with a something that did not burden them elsewhere. They brought it up from that sinister bay to the west..... It was a presence - an imaginary shape or essence from the human multitude lying below; those who had gone down in vessels of war, East-Indiamen, barges, brigs, and ships of the Armada - select people, common, and debased, whose interests

39. See pp. 109, 110, 118, 119 for other descriptive passages.

40. See book, p. 283.

and hopes had been as wide asunder as the poles, but who had rolled each other to oneness on that restless sea-bed. There could almost be felt the brush of their huge composite ghost as it ran a shapeless figure over the isle, shrieking for some good god who would disunite it again." 41

B. The passages which deal with the pagan history of the isle are more numerous than those simply descriptive. The aesthetic and poetical value of passages such as those following is clearly seen.⁴²

1. "The twain wandered a long way that night amid these influences - so far as to the old Hope Church-yard, which lay in a ravine formed by a landslip ages ago. The church had slipped down with the rest of the cliff, and had long been a ruin. It seemed to say that in this last local stronghold of the pagan divinities, where pagan customs lingered yet, Christianity had established itself precariously at best." 43

2. "The Caros, like some other local families, suggested a Roman lineage, more or less grafted on the stock of the Slingers. Their features recalled those of the Italian peasantry to anyone as familiar as he (Pierston) was with them, and there were evidences that the Roman colonists had been populous and long-abiding in and near this corner of Britain. Tradition urged that a temple to Venus once stood at the top of the Roman road leading up into the isle; and possibly one to the love-goddess of the Slingers antedated this. What so natural as that the true star of his soul would be found nowhere but in one of the old island breed?" 44

3. "He thought of nothing but the isle, and Avise the Second dwelling therein - 45 inhaling its salt breath, stroked by its singing rains and by the haunted atmosphere of Roman Venus about and around the site of her perished temple there." 46

41. See book, p. 19.

42. Other passages of aesthetic value may be found on pp. 115, 116, 158, 160, 178, 179.

43. See book, p. 19.

44. See book, p. 116.

45. This first occurs likewise in the magazine story, but the lines following are only in the book.

46. See book, p. 130.

IV.

A Consideration of Textual Changes.

The various textual changes made in the serial version of the story bear more or less evidence of its hasty composition. The number and extent of these substitutions, some of minor, others of major importance, may easily be sensed from even a cursory examination of the annotated book. In this brief discussion of them we shall make four classifications.

- A. Corrections in grammar.
- B. Changes in diction.
- C. Changes in dialogue.
- D. Changes in sentence structure.

A. Even in his greatest books Hardy did not escape the well-authenticated charge of being ungrammatical. It may be said, however, that fewer errors occur in The Well-Beloved than in several other of his books.⁴⁷ Strange to say the split infinitive, that pit-fall of Hardy's, which Mr. Lionel Johnson "takes so deeply to heart",⁴⁸ occurs but once in the magazine version. We read, "The whole noise impressed him with the sense that no one in its enormous mass imagined rest to be ever required."⁴⁹ In the book the sentence is, "The whole noise impressed him with the sense that no one in its enormous mass ever required rest."⁴⁹

47. There are several gross errors in Tess of the D'Urbervilles and by no means a few in The Mayor of Casterbridge and A Pair of Blue Eyes, to which my attention has been called by Prof. Joseph Beach.

48. See a criticism on Mr. Johnson's book, The Art of Thomas Hardy, in the Nation, Mar. 21, 1895.

49. See Chap. XX in I L N, or p.197 of the annotated book.

In one place in the book, however, Hardy has deliberately split an infinitive which in the serial was quite as it should be. "A countenance so renovated by faint moonlight as fairly to correspond"⁵⁰ is changed in the revised book version so that the infinitive is split, and the "countenance renovated.....to fairly correspond."⁵⁰

In the serial Avica is "gazing up at the soldier aloft"⁵¹ while in the book she is only "gazing at the soldier aloft";⁵¹ again in the serial she stands "in a chair",⁵² and in the book "on a chair".⁵²

B. There are several interesting changes in diction made obviously for the sake of vividness.⁵³

Pierston listens to the sounds of the island in the afternoon. According to the serial: "He listened, and heard sounds; nick - nick, saw - saw - saw. Those were the island's voice - the noises of the quarrymen and stone-sawyers."⁵⁴ In the book the sounds are described as "whir - whir, saw - saw - saw", and the "island's voice" is its "snores" in "its afternoon sleep."⁵⁴

In the magazine story the "summit of the isle" is "created with its enormous ramparts";⁵⁵ in the book the "forehead of the isle" is "crowned with its enormous ramparts as with a mural crown!"⁵⁵

50. See p. 265 of annotated book.

51. See p. 169 of annotated book.

52. See p. 202 of annotated book.

53. For other changes in diction which add to the pictorial effect, see p.223-line 4, p.33-line 4, p. 214 - line 17, and p. 4 - lines 20-23 in the annotated book.

54. See p. 5 - lines 10-12 in annotated book.

55. See p. 167 - line 7 in annotated book.

C. The use of the Wessex dialect which is one of the greatest elements of charm in Hardy's dialogue was neglected in the composition of the earlier story. Although Avice the First and her granddaughter, Avice the Third, are represented as cultivated young ladies, quite above the island dialect, we are disappointed that in the conversation between Pearston and Avice the Second, who, we are told, is distinctly inferior in cultivation, there is so little of the island dialect. In the book, however, Hardy has seized his opportunity to add local color, and Avice the Second is here more true to herself and her surroundings in her speech. Moreover, in the later version, the island quarrymen are truer to type when they lapse into dialect in their conversations with Pearston and among themselves.

A single illustration is sufficient to show the change, as the dialectic expressions are similar in all instances. ⁵⁶

In the serial Avice the Second says:

"'When you was following me to Slopeway Well two hours ago, I looked round and saw you, and hid behind a stone.'" 56

She is more natural in the book when she says:

"'When you was following me to Street o' Wells two hours ago, I looked round and saw 'ee, and huddled behind a stone.'" 57

D. In several instances Hardy, in the revision of the serial story, has greatly improved the sentence structure, thereby adding

56. Other examples of substitution of dialect may be found on pp. 24, 154, 163, 164, 202, 252 of the annotated book.

57. See p. 161 of the annotated book.

coherence and emphasis to many a careless construction. There are numerous examples of such revision,⁵⁸ and several instances as well where substitutions have been made in the place of the original sentence. Two typical examples are given below.

1. "They were wondering whether she had been successful in her quest, which was for some near relative who had lived in the before-mentioned isle, of which she was also a native."⁵⁹

2. "He hardly knew what he did for a moment." (Original)⁶⁰

"He hardly knew for a moment what he did." (Revised)⁶⁰

3. "As you approach the upper end of the street all progress seems about to be prevented by the almost vertical face of the escarpment, into which your track apparently runs point-blank: a confronting mass which, if it were to slip down, would overwhelm the whole town." (Original)⁶¹

"As you approach the upper end of the street all progress seems about to be checked by the almost vertical face of the escarpment. Into it your track apparently runs point-blank: a confronting mass which, if it were to slip down, would overwhelm the whole town." (Revised)⁶¹

58. Other examples of original and revised sentence structure may be found on p. 226, Insert 41, and p. 153 - lines 22 - 23.

59. Because of plot revision this sentence does not occur in the book. See p. 226, Insert 41.

60. See p. 239, lines 3 - 4, of the annotated book.

61. See p. 167, lines 10 - 15, of the annotated book.

V.

A General Comparison of the Two Versions.

It has been the object of the foregoing study to present in as clear a manner as possible the differences which are evident upon a comparison of the two versions (serial, 1892, and book, 1897) of Thomas Hardy's novel, The Well-Beloved; and to show in what ways and for what purposes changes were made in the original version in the preparation for its publication in book form.

By illustration and comparison we have endeavored to show:

- 1) that the plot of the later version is not only more plausible in content, but also far more cleverly executed than that of the serial story;
- 2) that the dramatic quality and general tone of the book are far superior to those of the earlier serial, because of the elimination of much melodramatic and sentimental material;
- 3) that the addition of several fine descriptive passages and of passages dealing with the early history of the "isle" give to the book a pictorial setting and an aesthetic coloring quite absent from the serial; and
- 4) that the changes in grammar, dialogue, diction, and sentence structure contribute in a large degree to the superiority of style which is quite manifest in the later version.

Conclusion.

Had Mr. William Lyon Phelps been acquainted with The Pursuit of the Well-Beloved when he wrote his critical study of The Well-Beloved, he would have had greater cause to say, "With a plot that would wreck any other novelist, the author has constructed a power-

ful and beautifully written novel."⁶² Surely, the manner in which Thomas Hardy re-made a melodramatic, sentimental narrative, unworthy of his genius, into a finished product demands our admiration.

62. See the North American Review, Oct. 1909, p. 502.